

THE  
TRIUMPHS  
OF GODS REVENGE,  
AGAINST THE CRYING  
and execrable sinne of  
*Murber.*

*In thirtie severall Tragical Histories,*  
(digested into six Books) committed in di-  
uers Countryes beyond the Seas, and  
never before published or imprim-  
ted in any Language.

---

Written by JOHN REYNOLDS.

---

Booke II.

---



AT LONDON,  
Imprinted by FELIX KYNGSTON,  
for William Lee, and are to be sold at his shop  
in Fleet-street, at the signe of the golden  
Buck, neare Scrivants Lane.  
1622.

Charles Hennix His Righter

CHARVAT





TO THE RIGHT  
HONOURABLE, AND TRVLY  
Noble, RICHARD Lo. BUCKHVRST,  
Earle of DOrSET, and Lo. Lieutenant of  
his Maiesties County of  
S V S S X.

RIGHT HONOVRABLE:

 *Vt of a resolution, whe-  
ther more bold or ze-  
alous, I know not: I haue  
aduentured this second  
Booke of my Tragicall  
Histories to the world, under your Ho-  
nours Patronage and protection: Nei-  
ther need I goe farre to yeeld either your  
Ho. or the world, a reason of this my  
Presumption and Ambition, sith your*

## The Epistle Dedicatore.

vertues innobling your blood, as much  
as your Nobility illustrates your ver-  
tues, was the first motiue which drew  
me hereunto: for whiles many others en-  
deuour to be great, your Ho. (resembling  
your selfe) not onely endeuors, but striues  
to be good: as well knowing that Good-  
nesse is the glory and essence, yea the life,  
and as I may say, the soule of Greatnesse;  
and that betwixt Greatnes and Good-  
nesse there is this difference and dispari-  
ty; that, makes vs famous; this, immor-  
tall; that, beloved of men; this, of God;  
that accompanyeth vs onely to our graues,  
and this, to Heauen. My second preuail-  
ing motiue in this my Dedication, pro-  
ceeded from the respect of my particular  
duty, (as my first was soley deriuued from  
the consideration of your owne generall  
and generous vertues:) for having the  
honour

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

honour to retaine to your Noble Brother, Sir Edward Sackuile Knight, to whom, for many singular respects, and (immerited) fauours (whiles I am my selfe) I owe not onely my seruice, but my selfe; It berein hold me obliged and bound to proffer and impart this part of my labours to your Ho. (as the first publike testimony of my zeale and seruice, eternally deuoted and consecrated to the Illustrious name and family of the Sackuiles: whereof, Gods diuine prouidence hath made your Ho. chiefe heire and pillar. The drift and scope of these Histories are to informe the world, how Gods reuenge stil fights and triumphs against the crying and execrable sinne of (wilfull and premeditated) murther, which in these our (impure and profane) times, is so fatally and frequently coin-

## The Epistle Dedicatore.

cident to vnregenerate Christians :  
which scarlet and bloody crime is infal-  
libly met with, and rewarded by Gods  
sharpe and seuere punishments ; having  
purposely published and divulged them to  
my deare Country of England, that they  
may serue ( though not by the way of com-  
parison, yet of application ) as the sight of  
Iulius Cælars bloody Robe, ( shewed  
by Marcus Antonius to the Romanes,  
in Campo Martio, when hee there pro-  
nounced his funerall Oration,) thereby  
to make his murther, and murtherers in  
the greater horrour and execration with  
the people. The Histories of themselues  
are as different, as their effects and acci-  
dents : their Scenes being wilfully and  
sinfully laid in diuers parts of Christen-  
dome beyond the seas, and the Trage-  
dies unfortunately perpetrated and per-  
sonated

## The Epistle Dedicatore.

sonated by those, who more adherring to impiety, then Grace, and to Satan, then God, made shipwracke, if not of their soules with their bodies, I am sure of their liues with their fortunes, and of their fortunes with their liues. They themselves, ( or rather their sinnes ) first brought the Materials, I onely the Collection, illustration and polishing of these their deplorable Histories, which are penned in solowe a sphere of speech: and so inelegant a phrase, as they can no way merit the Honour of your perusal, much lesse of your judgement, and least of all, of your noble protection and patronage.

Howsoever, my hopes ( led and marshalled by the premises ) doe as it were flatter me, that your perfections will wink at my imperfections, and your curiosity at my

## The Epistle Dedicatore.

my ignorance and presumption, in daigning permit this my rude Pamphlet, to salute and pilgrimage the world, under the authenticall passe-port of your Honours fauour; who of her selfe is composed of so poore metall, (or rather drossē) as without the pure gold of your Honourable name, it would run a hazard, not to passe currant with the curious wits, and censures of this our (too curious, and too censorious) age: whereof could I rest assurred, I should then not onely reioyce, but triumph in this my happinesse, as so richly exceeding the proportion of my poore labours and merits, that I could not aspire to a greater honour, nor desire a sweeter felicity: And so recommending this my imperfect Pamphlet to your fauour, my vnworthy selfe to your pardon; and your Ho. (your Noble Countesse, and the sweet

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

*sweet young Lady your Daughter, to  
Gods best fauours and mercies: I will  
assume the confidence, and con-  
stancy to remaine*

*Your Honours in all hu-  
mility and seruice,*

JOHN REYNOLDS.

o, quod non solum  
in te, sed etiam in aliis  
est, quod non solum  
in te, sed etiam in aliis

et illud est quod  
in te, sed etiam in aliis

John Rutherford

## The Grounds, and Contents of these Histories.

### Hist. VI.

Victoryna causeth Syponentus to stabbe and murther her first husband Souranza, and she her selfe poisoneth Fassino her second: so they both being miraculously detected, and convicted of these their cruell murthers, he is beheaded, and she hang'd and burnt for the same.

### Hist. VII.

Catalina causeth her Waying-maide Ansilua, two severall times, attempt to poison her owne Sister Berinthia: wherein fayling, she afterwards makes an Empericke, tearm'd Sarmiata, poison her sayd Maide Ansilua: Catalina is kill'd with a Thunder-bolt, and Sarmiata hang'd for poisoning Ansilua, Antonio steales Berinthia away by her owne consent: whereupon her brother Sebastiano fightes with Antonio, and kills him in a Duell: Berinthia, in revenge hereof, afterwards murthereth her brother Sebastiano: she is adiudged to be immured twixt two walls, and there hangis forth and dyes.

### Hist. VIII.

Belluile treacherously murthereth Poligny in the street. Laurita, Poligny's Mistrie, betrayeth Belluile to her Chamber, and there, in revenge stoothes him thorow the body with a Pistoll, when assysted by her Waying-maide Lucilla, they likewise give him many wounds with a Poyard, and so murther him. Lucilla synging for shis fale, is drownid in a Lake, and Laurita is taken, and hang'd and burnt for the same.

### Hist. IX.

Iacomo de Castelnouo, lustfully falls in loue with his daughter in law Perina, his owne sonnes Francisco de Castelnouo's wife:

## The Contents.

whom to enjoy, bee causeth Ierantha first to poison his owne Lady Fidelia, and then his sayd sonne Francisco de Castelnous; in revenge whereof, Perina treacherously murthereth him in his bed. Ierantha ready to dy in travell of child, confesseth her two murthers, for the which she is hang'd and burnt: Perina hath her right hand cut off, and is condemned to perpetuall imprisonment, where she sorrowfully dyes.

## Hist. X.

Bertolini seekes Paulina in marriage, but shee lones Sturio, and not himselfe: he prayes her brother Brellati his deare friend, to sollicit her for him, which he doth, but cannot preuaile: whereupon Bertolini lets fall some disgracefull speeches, both against her honour and his reputation: for which Brellati challengeth the field of him, where Bertolini kills him, and he flies for the same. Sturio seekes to marry her, but his father will not consent thereto, and conuayes him away secretly: for which two disasters, Paulina dyes for sorrow. Sturio finds out Bertolini, and sends him a challenge, and having him at his mercy, giues him his life at his request: he afterwards very treacherously kills Sturio with a Petronell in the street from a window: he is taken for this second murther, his two hands cut off, then beheaded, and his body throwne into the Riuere.

## ERRATA

Page 9, line 8. for lookes saw, or, read looke from Sawing, p.131.3.  
for eight daies, v. eight daies after, p.164.14. for morrow, morn, p.54.1.  
25. for thought, r. thoughts, p.57.1.23. for Alverys, s. Villares, p.62.1.5. for  
preparative, r. preferuative, p.67.1.18. for signet, s. signall, p.67.1.16. for  
the proceeding, r. thy proceeding, p.95.1.18. for Gentlewoman, r. Gen-  
tlemen, p.107.1.27. for thinker, r. thank, p.126.1.7. for or whose, r. or who  
not, p.128.1.7. for the great, r. thy great, p.125.1.10. for impious, r. impri-  
soned, p.128.1.9. for shalby, shella, shalby, ougly, shalby, shalby, shalby



THE  
TRIUMPHS OF  
GODS REVENGE AGAINST  
the crying and execrable sinne  
of Murther.

History VI.

Victoryna causeth Syponentus to stab and murther her first Husband Souranza, and she her selfe poysoneth Fassino her second: so they both being miraculously detected and convicted of these their cruell murthers, he is beheaded, and she hanged, and burnt for the same.

**W**Here lust takes vp our desires, and reuenge and murther seazeth on our resolutions, it is the true way to make vs wretched in this life, and our soules miserable in that to come : for if *Chastity* and *Charity* (the two precious vertues and ornaments of a Christian) steere not our actions on *Earth* : how shall (nay how can) we hope to arriue to the harbour of *Heauen*? or if we abandon these celestiall vertues, to follow and imbrace those infernall vices : what doe wee but take our selues from felicity to misery, and consequently

giue our selues from *God* to *Satan*? But did we seriously  
(and not triuially) consider that there is a *Heauen* to  
reward the righteous, and a *hell* to punish the vngodly,  
we would neither defile our hearts, nor pollute our  
soules, with the thought, much lesse with the action  
of such beastly and inhumane crimes : but in this sinfull  
age of ours, the number is but too great of lasciuious  
and impious Christians, who delight in the affection  
and practice thereof : among whom, I here represent  
the History of an execrable Gentlewoman, and  
her wretched and vnfortunate Louer, who were both  
borne to honour, and not to infamy : had they had as  
much grace to secure their liues, as vanity and impie-  
ty to ruine them. *The History* is bloody, and therefore  
mournfull : but if we detest their crimes, wee need not  
feare their punishments : for *God* is as gracious and  
propitious to protect the innocent, as iust and feuere  
to chastise the guilty.

In *Italy* the beauty of *Europe*, and in the City of *Vene-*  
*ce*, (the glory of *Italy*, the Nymph of the sea, and the  
*Pearle* and *Diamond* of the world) in the latter yeeres  
of the raigne of noble *Leonardo Donato*, who, as Duke,  
sat to the helme of that potent and powerfull *Estate*:  
(so famous for banishing the *Jesuites*, and for opposing  
himselfe against the intrusion and fulminations of  
*Pope Paulus Quintus*, in the iust defence and mainte-  
nance of the prerogatiues and priuiledges of the *Seignory*.) There was at that time a *Gentleman*, a younger  
brother, yet of well-neere fifty yeeres-old, of the Noble  
family of the *Beraldis*, named, *Seignior Iacomo Beraldis*,  
who dwelt aboue the *Rialto* bridge, (that famous ma-  
ster-piece of Architecture) vpon the *Canalle Grando*,  
who

who in the Aprill of his yonth, tooke to wife the *Dona Lucia*, daughter to *Seignior Lorenzo Burffo*, a Gentleman of *Padua*; by whom hee had seuen children, foure sonnes, and three daughters: so as his wife and hee esteeming themselues happy in their issue, past away their time in much content and felicity: but *God* (for some secret and sacred reasons to his divine *Majestie* best knowne) conuerting his smiles into frownes, within the space of seuen yeeres, takes away sixe of their children, so as their eldest daughter onely remained liuing, being a young Gentlewoman of some eighteene yeres old, named, *Dona Victoryna*.

This young *Gentlewoman*, being noble, rich, and faire, (three powerful and attractive Adamants, to draw the affections of many *Canaliers*) she, according to her desir, had diuers Gallants who sought her in marriage: but she was of *nature* proud, cholerick, disdainfull and malicious; vices enow to ruine both a beauty and a fortune: but of all her sutors and seruants, he whom she best loued and affected, was one *Seignior Syponius*, a Gentleman of the City, who was more noble then rich, and yet more debosht and vicious, then noble; but otherwise a very proper young Gallant: but the perfections of the body, are nothing to bee compared to the excellent qualities and indowments of the minde, for those are but the varnishes and shadowes of a meere man; but these the perfections and excellencies of a wise man, and therein noble: sith indeed wisedome is one of the truest degrees, and most essentiall parts of Nobility. Now if *Victoryna* loue *Syponius*; with no lesse reciprocall flame and zeale doth *Syponius* affect *Victoryna*: for as his eyes behold the delicacy

of her personage, and the sweetnesse of her beauty : so his heart loues either, and adores both : yea, so deepe an impression hath shee ingrauen in his thoughts and contemplations, that he is neuer merry till he see her, nor pleased till he injoy the felicity of her company ; which *Victoryna* much reioyceth to see, and obserues with infinite content and delectation. *Syponentus* thus intangled in the snares of *Victoryna's* beauty, and shee likewise in those of his perfections, he resolues to court her, and seek her in marriage, which hee performs with much affection, zeale and constancy ; leauing no industry, care, curiositie, or cost, vnattempted, to inrich and crowne his desires with the precious and inestimable treasures of her loue. I should make this short Discourse swell into an ample History, to particularize, or punctually relate the Letters, Sonnets, presents, meetings, dancings, musick, and banquets which past twixt these two louers, and wherewith *Syponentus* entertained his deare Mistresse *Victoryna*: I will therefore purposely omit it, and couer my selfe with this excuse, which may satisfie my Reader, to consider, that *Syponentus* (as before) was an *Italian*, whose custome and nature rather exceed, then come short in all amorous ceremonies and complements : and therefore againe to resume my History ; I must briefly declare, that after the protraction and recess of a yeeres time, *Victoryna* consenteth to *Syponentus* to be his wife, so far forth as he can obtaine those of her father and mother : a fit and vertuous answere of a daughter, wherein I know not whether she bewray more modesty and discretion in her selfe, or respect and obedience to her Parents.

*Syponentus*

Sypontus infinitely pleased with this sweet newes and delightfull melody, is as it were rauished and rap't vp into heauen with ioy, when flattering himselfe with this poore hope, that as *Victoryna* was courteous, so he should finde her Parents kind to him : hee, with much respect and honour, repaires to *Beraldi* and *Lucia*, and in faire and discreet termes acquaints them with his long affection to their daughter *Victoryna*; whom (with as much earnestnes as humility) he prayes to bestow her on him for his wife: but this old couple are as much displeased at *Sypontus* his motion, as their daughter *Victoryna* reioyceth therat, and so they returne him their denial in stead of their consent : onely in generall tearmes they thanke him for his loue and honour, and certifie him that they haue otherwise disposed of their daughter. *Sypontus* bites the lip, and *Victoryna* hangs her head at this their bitter and distastfull answere: but he is too generous and amarous to bee put off with this first repulse. Wherupon he employes his Parents and kinsfolkes, (whereof some were of the chiefest ranke of *Senators* and *Magnificos*) to draw *Beraldi* and *Lucia* to consent to this match : but in vaine : for they are deafe to those requests, and resolute in their denial, grounding their refusall vpon *Sypontus* his pouerty : for they see hee is become poore ; because in the last trans-marine warres, the *Turkes* tooke from his father and himselfe, most of his lands and possessions neere *Scutari* in *Dalmatia*, and therfore they resolute to provide a richer husband for their daughter. The iniquity of our times are as strange as lamentable : for in matters of marriage, Parents, without due regard either to the natures or affections of their children, still preferre

preferre gold before Grace, and many times riches before Vertue and Nobility, which concurre and meete in one personage: but diuers of these marriages, in the end, finde either shame, misery, or repentance, and sometimes all.

*Syponentus* stornes as much as *Victoryna* grieues at his refiall: but to frustrate that, and prouide for this: *Beraldus* deales with *Seignior Iouan Battista Souranza* to marry his daughter *Victoryna*: who is a Gentleman of a good house, but farre richer then *Syponentus*; but withall farre different in age: for *Syponentus* is but twenty eight yeeres old, and *Souranza* neere threescore. So as gold playing the chieffest part in this contract, *Souranza* is sure of *Victoryna* for his wife ere hee know her, or hardly hath seene her. *Beraldus* aduertiseth his daughter of his will and pleasure herein: so *Souranza* sees her with affection and ioy, and she him with disdaine and griefe: and thus this old louer, the first time entertaines his young *Mistresse* with kisses, and she him with teares. He is no sooner departed, but *Victoryna* very sorrowfully & pensiuely throwes herselfe to her Parents feet, and with shewres of teares, very earnestly and passionately beseech them, that they will not inforce her to marry *Souranza*, whom (she affirmes) shee cannot loue, much lesse obey, prayes them to consider what a misery, nay what a hell it wil be to her thoughts and selfe, to haue him in her bed, and *Syponentus* in her heart. When she could no further proceed, because her fighes cut her words in pieces, and so grieve daunting her hart, and her feare to *Souranza*, and affection to *Syponentus*, casting a milke-white Vaile ouer her vermillion checkes, shee sinkes to the earth in a fainting cold swoone.

swoone. When her hard-hearted and cruell Parents (more with astonishment then commiseration and pitty) step to her assistance , and againe bring her to her fences : who not forgetting where her speeches ended, she remembers to begin, and continue them thus: O my deare Parents , name not *Souranza* for my husband , but if yee will needes give me one, then by all that blood of yours, which streameth in all the veines of my body ; of two let me enjoy one, either *Syponius*, or my Graue; he the beginner of my ioyes, or this the ender of all my miseries and sorrowes: neither is it disobedience in mee , but feare of cruelty in your felues, that throwes me on the exigent of this request and resolution; whereon I pray, consider by the bonds of nature, and not by the rules of auarice and inhumanity. But her Father and Mother (without any respect to her youth, and teares, or regard to her affection and prayers) loue *Souranza*'s wealth so wel, as they wil hate *Syponius* his pouerty, and in it himselfe : and therefore checking *Victoryna* for her folly , and taxing her of indiscretion , their command and authority giues a law to her obedience and desires: And to conclude, they are so bitter , and withall so cruell to her , that within few dayes , they violently enforce her to marrie *Souranza*: But this enforced match will produce repentence and misery of all sides.

As it is a duty in children to honour and obey their Parents, so it is no lesse in Parents carefully to regard and tenderly to affect their children : but in matches that are concluded with wealth without affection, there Parents ought proceede with judgement, not with passion, with perswasion, not with force : for can there

there be any hell vpon earth , comparable to that of a discontented bed , or is it not a griefe to Parents, through their cruelty, to see their children liue in despaire, in stead of hope; in affliction in stead of ioy: and to die miserably, whereas they might haue liued pleasantly and prosperously? Tis true that young folkes affections are not still well grounded , but for want of aduice and counsell many times meete with misery for felicity : yet sith marriage is a contract not for a day, but for euer, not for an houre, but for the terme & lease of our liues, therefore Parents, in matching their chil-dren, should be rather charitable then greedy for the world , and rather compassionate then ridged : but enough of this, and againe to our *History*.

We haue seene *Victoryna*, with an vnwilling willing-nesse, enforc'd to marrie *Souranza*: wee shall not goe farre, before wee see what sharpe calamities, and bitter afflictions & miseries this match produceth: *The argu-ment and cause, briefly is thus: Victoryna lyes with her hus-band Souranza, but cannot love him*: from whence (as so many lines frō their centre) spring forth many mournfull & disastrous accidents: the little Ring of matrimo-ny incloseth many great and waighty considerations, & among others this is not one of the least: disparity in yeeres makes no true harmony in affections ; for there is no affinity twixt *January* and *May*, and it is a matter, though not impossible, yet difficult for youth and age to sympathize: *Souranza his best performance of the rites and duties of marriage, is but desire*: yea, his age cannot sufficiently estimate , much lesse reward the dainties of *Victoryna's* youth, for hee is more superstiti-ous then amorous , as delighting rather to kisse an

Image

Image in the Church, then his wife in his bed, and not to betray the truth. I must crane leape of modesty, to auerre that shee findes little difference twixt a Mayd and a Wife, so as her lust out-brauing her chasteitie, and sensuality trampling her vertues and honour vnder foote: whereas her affection should looke from *Syponius* to *Souranza*: both shee and it contrariwise, looke *Souranza* to *Syponius*. Dissembling pleasures, which strangle when they seeme to embrace and kisse vs, bitter Pils candid in Sugar, Cordials to the fence, but corrosives to the soule! Yea, *Victoryna* in forgetting her modesty, will not remember her vow in marriage, for had shee beene as vertuous as young, or as chaste as faire, it had not onely beene her vertue, but her duty, to haue smothered the defects, and concealed the imperfections and impotencie of her old husband: chastity would haue perswaded her to this, but incontinencie and lust draw her to a contrary resolution.

*Syponius* likewise stormes and grieues at this vn-wished and vnequall match of old *Souranza*, with his young and faire *Victoryna*: yea, he hates him so much, and loues her so tenderly and dearely, as hee would, but cannot preuent it: for (as before)they are married: and he in stead of the *Laurell*, is enforced to weare the *Willow*: but his griefe findes this comfort, and her discontent this consolation, that sith *Victoryna* is not his wife, she is his *Mistresse*: and sith *Syponius* is not her husband, hee is her seruant, or (to vse the *Venetian* phrase) she is his *Courtizana*, and hee her *Enamorata*: but such leagues and contracts of vicious affections, seldome make happy ends, for as they begin in lust, so commonly they terminate in infamy and misery. *Sy-*

*Syponius* often familiarizeth with *Victoryna*, yea their familiarity is such, as I in modesty will not report, sith in chastity I cannot, and although they beare their affections and pleasures secret, yet custome breeding a habite, and that a second nature, *Souranza* is now no sooner abroad, but *Syponius* is at home, so as in effect *Souranza* is but the shadow, and *Syponius* the substance of *Victoryna*'s husband: but these lasciuious Louers shal pay deare for their affections, *Syponius* for entertaining and keeping another mans wife, and *Victoryna* for breaking her vow in wedlocke to her husband, in defiling his bed, and contaminateing her body with the soule sinne of adultery.

It had beeene good and safe for them, if they had not begun these their beastly pleasures, but to give no end to them, must needs proue dangerous and ruinous: to commit this sinne of adultery, is odious, but to perseuer therein, is most abominable before God: the reason hereof is as true as pregnant, for if the reward of a single sinne bee death, the redoubling thereof must needs be double damnation: but as it is the nature of adultery to be accompanied and waited on by other sinnes: so *Victoryna* is not onely content to loue *Syponius*, but she makes a farther progression in impiety, and will needs hate her husband *Souranza*: who poore honest Gentleman, sick with the Gowt, and a Cough of the lungs, is now distastfull, and which is worse, odious to her: so that shee which should be a cordiall to his age, his age is now a corrosive to her youth, and shee so farre forgets both her selfe and her duty, as she rather contemnes then loues him, and as bee reioyceth in her sight, so shee delights in nothing  
so

so much as in his absence, and *Syponius* presence : she makes her discontents and malice to her husband, knowne to *Syponius*, who doth pity, but will not remedy them : all her speeches tend to with her selfe in another world, or her husband not in this. *Syponius* is not ignorant whereat she ayms : but although he enjoy the wife, yet he cannot finde in his heart, but is too conscientious to murther the husband : had he remained in the constancy of this resolution, he had beeene happy, and not so miserable and vnfortunate to end his dayes with shame and infamy. But now behold, an vnxpected accident drawes and throwes him on headlong to perpetrate this execrable murther, for(as the *Gentry* and *Nobility* of *Venice* are, for the most part Marchants) so *Syponius* receiueth sudaine and sorrowfull newes of two great losses besafine him, in the *Levant* seas, in two severall ships, the one comming from *Allepo*, taken by the *Turkish Pyrates* of *Rhodes*, the other from *Alexandria*, taken, as is supposed, by one of the *Duke of Ossuna's Neopolitan Gallies*, scowring the *Illands* of the *Archipelagus*, in which two vessels hee lost at least sevnty thousand *Zeycknes*, it being the two third parts of his whole estate : and now to main-taine his greatnessse, and beare vp his port and reputa-tion, knowing *Soranzo* to be infinitely rich, and his wife *Victoryna* young, amorous, and faire : he agrees with the diuell, and so resolues to murther him, and then to marrie her : which he knowes, she aboue any earthly matter chiefly desires. Loe here the founda-tion and project of a murther, as lamentable as execrable ! Necessity in base spirits may be a powerfull; but in those more vertuous and noble, it should never

be a penicuous and prodigious counsellor: for there is as much generosity and fortitude in supporting poverty with patience, as there is covetousnesse in being ambitious to purchase wealth with infamy.

At the nexte enteruiew and meeting of *Syponius & Victoria*, she like a bad womā, a wicked wife, & a wretched creature, redoubleth him her complaints and discontents against her husband; and because *Syponius* knowes it wisedome to strike whiles the iron is hote, as also that Time must be taken by the forelocke: he like a wretched Politician, layes hold of this occasion and opportunity, and so consenteth to the murther of her husband, when fro this bloody resolutiō, they passe to the manner how to effect it: they confute on this lamentable busynesse. *Victoryna* ( industrious in her malice) proposest to poyson him, and so to burie him in her little garden: but *Syponius* dislikes this proiect, and proffers her to murther him in his *Gondola*, as he comes from *Lucifizina*: whereon they agree. So some tenne daies after, *Victoryna* aduertizeth him, that her husband is to goe to his house of pleasure in the Countrey, neare *Padua*, on the banke of the riuer *Brema*, where he is onely to stay three dayes. *Syponius* imbraceth this occasion, and continually wantonizing with his wife in his absence, promiseth her to meet her husband at his retурne, and then to dispatch him: which newes with a longing desire this miserable Courtizan *Victoryna* attends with as much impatience as impudency. *Syponius* in the meane time (in fauour of twice tenne *Zekynes*) is prepared of two wicked *Gondoliers* or wa-termen, who deeply vow, and swere to conceale this murther. So the precise day of *Souranza's* departure  
from

from his Countrey house, being come, *Sypontus*, not to fail of his promise to his Mistrisse *Victoryna*, in the execution of this his bloody and damnable attempt, takes his *Gondola*, and houers in the direct passage betwixt *Lucifizina*, and *Venice*, for *Souranza* his arriuall: who, poore harmlesse Gentleman, loued his young wife so tenderly and dearly, as hee thought this short time long that he had wanted from her: but hee hath seene his last of her, and alas, alas, he shall see an end of himselfe: for about fise of the clocke in the euening (it being Summer time) his vsuall hower of returne, he takes *Gondola* at *Lucifizina*, for *Venice*, and neere midway twixt both, *Sypontus* espies him, and the sooner, because it being hot weather, and no wind stirring, *Souranza* had caused his courtaines to bee withdrawne. *Sypontus* (inflamed with boyling malice and reuenge) with all possible celerity makes towards his *Gondola*, the which disguised and masked hee enters, and there with his Ponyard very diuellishly stabs him three feuerall times at the hart, when falling down dead to his feet, he most barbarously cut off his beard, and nose (that he might not be known) and so throwes him into the Sea; as also his Waterman after him, that they might tell no tales: when hauing finished these execrable murthers, he with his *Gondola*, with all possible speed hyes first to *Murano*, and so lands by the *Patriarchy*: from thence by the *Arsenal*, and so to his owne house behind *Saint Servi's Church*, thereby to cast a fairer varnish on his villany, by landing and comming into the City another way, when being arriued at his house, he that night, by a confident seruant of his, sends *Victoryna* this Letter.

Faire and deare Victورyna, I haue begun, and ended a  
busynesse, which infinity imports thy good, and my content:  
the party hath drunke his fill of White and Claret, and  
is now gone to his eternall rest: so a little time, I hope, will  
wipe off thy old teares, and confirme thy new ioyes: be but as  
affectionate, as I secret: and as secret, as till death I will bee  
affectionate, and thou needst neither feare my fortunes, nor  
doubt thine owne: judge what I would doe to inioy thee, and  
for thy sake, sith I haue already undertaken and acted a busynesse  
of this nature: we must for a time refraine each others  
company, that wee may the sooner meet, and imbrace, with  
more content, and lesse danger.

## SIPONTVS.

*Victورyna* infinitely reioyceth at this newes, and the  
better to cloke her malice, vnder the vaile of secrete,  
she laments and complaines to her father of her hus-  
bands long absence. *Souranza's* Parents are by *Beralda*  
acquainted herewith, they begin to finde the time of  
his stay very long, and now resolute to send his nephew,  
*Seignior Andrea Souranza* vp the riuier *Brenia*, to know  
the cause thereof: hee passeth and repasseth the Sluce  
of *Lucifrina*, and brings word that he departed thence  
for *Venice*, in a *Gondola*, foure dayes since: *Victورyna*  
his wife grieues, and weepes at his absence, so doe his  
owne Parents and friends, who enquire of all sides, but  
finde comfort or newes from none, what is become of  
him. And here, Reader, before thy curiositie carry thee  
further, I coniure thee to stand astonished & wonder,  
at the inscrutable and wonderfull judgement of God,  
in the detection of this murther. For Fishermen some  
eight dayes casting out their nets betwixt the *Islands* of  
la

la Lazaris and Saint George Maiare, bring vp this dead body of murdered *Souranza*, being well apparelled: but chiefly for their owne discharge, they bring the dead corps to *Venice*, and land him at *Saint Markes* stayres, where they extend and expose his body to bee knowne of passengers: now behold further Gods miraculous prouidence, in the discouery and finding out hereof: for amogst the numberlesse number of spectators and walkers, who daily, and almost hourly frequent and adome that famous Burse and incomparable Palace, it happened that *Andrea Souranza* cast his eye on this dead and sea-withered body: on whom he looks with as much stedfastnesse as curiositie, as if Nature had made his living body a part of that dead; or as if his hot blood had some sympathy and affinity with that of the dead personage, which long since the coldnesse of the Sea had congealed and frozen: but at last espying a red spot in his necke (vnder his right eare) that he brought into the world with him, and which all the influence and vertue of the water of the Sea had not power to deface and wash away: as also obseruing a wart ouer his left eye-lid, which Nature had given his birth, and his youth his age: hee passionately cryes out before the world, that it is the body of his Vnkle, *Seignior Iouan Baptista Souranza*: so it is vistited by his Parents and friends, and knowne to bee the same: so they carry him to an adioyning house, and there deuesting it naked, finde that hee hath three severall wounds in his body, either of a Sword or Poniard, which giues matter of talke, and administreth cause of admiration in all the City: so they bury him honourably, according to his ranke and degree, and all knowing

knowing him to be murthered, infinitely bewaile his vntimely, and lament his mournfull death: but especially his wife *Victoryna*, who hauing formerly plaid the strumpet, then the murtheresse, now takes on the Maske, and assumes the representation of an Hypocrite; outwardly seeming to dye for sorrow, when God, and her foule and vicerated conscience knowes, that inwardly her heart leapes for ioy, thus to be depriu'd and freed of her old husband. Yea, and the more to bleare the eyes, and eclipse the iudgement of the world, for casting the least shadow of suspition on her, for this vnnaturall murther: she and her whole family take on blacke and mourning Attire, and for her selfe in two moneths after, neuer goes foorth her house, except to the Church where her husband was buried: where her hypocrisie is so infinitely feigned: and dissembling, that shee is often obserued to bedew and wash his Tombe with her teares: but these *Crocodile* teares of hers, and these her false and treacherous sorrowes shall not auaille her: for although Gods diuine and sacred Maestie be mercifull in his iustice, yet he is so iust in his mercies, as neither the politique secrecie of *Syponthus*, nor the hypocriticall sorrowes of *Victoryna*, for this cruell murther, shall goe either vnmask'd, or vnpunished: but in their due appointed time, they shall be brought forth in their colours, and made publique examples, as well of infamy, as destruction for the same: the manner is thus:

The deceased *Signior Ionan Souranza* hath a younger brother, named *Signior Hieronymo Souranza*: who hauing carefully and curiouly obserued, that his sister in law *Victoryna*, neuer perfectly nor dearely loued his brother

brother her husband, and that shee was neither so familiar, nor dutifull to him, as it behou'd her, during the terme of her marriage: which partly he attributed to the disparity of their yeeres, in respect of the frozennesse of his age, and the heat and freshnesse of her youth. Hee began vchemently to suspect her of this murther, which hee often reuolu'd and ruminated in his minde, as if the suggestion and perswasion thereof, not onely bore probability but truth with it: to which end, as the affection of a true friend (much more of a brother) shoulde passe beyond the Graue, and not remaine intomb'd, and buried in the dust thereof: he is resolu'd to put his best wits and inuention vpon the tenter-hookes, to discouer and reueale the same: to which end, hee breakes with *Victoryna's Gentlewoman*, who wayted on her in her Chamber, and who indeed was his owne Neece *Felicia*, to know what Gentlemen chiefly frequented her *Lady*. *Felicia* informes her Vnkle, that *Sygnior Syponius* is many nights with her, that there is much affection and familiarity betweene them, and that he sends her many Letters. Her Vnkle glad of this glimmering light, which hee hopes will produce a greater and perteeter, coniures her to intercept some of his Letters, for the more effectuall discouerie of his Brother & her Vnkles death. So *Felicia* promiseth her best care & fidelity herein, and shortly effecteth it: for in few dayes after being sent by her *Lady Victoryna* to a Casket of hers, to fetch her a new payre of *Romish Gloues*, shee opening an Iuory Box, therein findes a Letter; which she reades, and seeing it signed by *Syponius*, shee thinks it no sinne to be false to her *Lady*, and true to her Vnkle, and so very secret-

ly and safely sends it him ; which indeede was the very Letter we haue formerly seene and read : and now is his iealousie and suspition confirm'd. So vowed and sacrificing reuenge to his dead and murthered brother, away he goes to three chiefe Judges of the forty, who sit on criminall causes , and very passionately accuseth *Syponius* and *Victoryna* for the murther , committed on the person of his brother *Signior Iouan Baptista Souranza*, at sea : whereupon they are both committed prisoners, but sequestred in severall Chambers. *Syponius* is first examined, then *Victoryna*: they both very constantly deny the murther , and with many sugred words, and subtil euasions, intimate and insinuate their innocencies therein : so the next day the Judges produce *Syponius* his owne Letter ; the sight whereof extremely afflieteth and vexeth him: but he is constant in his deniall, and resolute in that constancie, and so takes on a brazen face ; and with many asseverations and imprecations, againe and againe denies it, auerring it is not his hand , but a meere imposture and inuention of his enemies, who haue counterfaited it, purposely to procure his ruine and destruction : yet inwardly to himselfe he feareth all is discouered, and that there is no meanes left him to escape death, whose image and forme hee now too apparantly and fatally sees before his eyes. So he is sent backe to his prison, and his Judges in the interim consult on his fact; where he is no sooner arrived, but bolting his Chamber priuately to himselfe, he considering that either *Victoryna*, or some for her, had betrayed him by his owne Letter, he in the bitter fury of choller and passion throwes away his Hat, now crosseith his armes, and then beates his

his brest, and stamping with his feet, at last very low to himselfe bandeth forth these speeches:

And is it possible, that I must now lose my life through *Victoryna* her folly and treachery, into whose hands I repos'd both my secrets and it? Haue I done what I haue done for her sake, and is this the requitall she giues me? And sith there is no other witnesse, must mine owne Letter be produced in iustice against me? What will I not doe? what haue I not done for her sake? Woe is mee, that I should liue to be rewarded with this monstrous and inhumane ingratitude; when for sorrow and indignation,not able to containe himselfe, he takes Pen and Paper, and writes *Victoryna* this ensuing Letter.

IS it possible that thy affection to mee hath beene all this while feigned, and that thou, whom I trusted with all my secrets, art now become the onely woman of the world to betray me? I haue hazarded my life for thy sake, and must I now be so unfortunate and wretched, to lose it through thy treacherie? When I bore matters with such care and secrecie, that no witnesse whaisoever could be produced against me, must mine owne Letter, which was safely deliuered thee, be brought forth to conuict me of my crime, and so to incurre death, which otherwise I had auoyded? Is this thy reward of my loue? Is this thy recompence of my affection? O *Victoryna*, *Victoryna*! Such is my tender esteeme of thy sweet yowth and beauty, that had I enjoyed a thousand livers, I would haue reputed my selfe happy, to haue lost them all for thy sake and seruice: and hauing but one, wilt thou be so cruell to deprive me thereof? But that my loyaltie and my affection may shine in thy malice, take this for thy comfort,

forst, that as I haue euer liv'd, so I will now dye thy true Servant and faythfull Louer.

## SY PONTVS.

But obserue here the error of *Syponius* his iudgement: for whiles he imputes it to *Victoryna's* treacherie, that this his Letter will occasion his death; hee is so irreligious and impious, as hee lookes not vp to heauen, to consider that the detection thereof proceedes from Gods immediate finger and prouidence. No: No. For the diuell yet holdes his thoughts so fast captiuated & intangled in the snare of *Victoryna's* beauty, as he hath not yet the grace to looke from his crime, to his repentance; nor consequently from Earth to Heauen: but like a prophanee *Liberine* and vnrege-native person, being within a small point of time neere his end, he yet thinks not of his soule nor of God, but onely dallies away the remainder of his houres, in the miserable contemplation of his fond affection and beastly sensuality.

By this time *Victoryna* hath receiu'd his Letter; at the newes and reading whereof, such is the passion of her frenzie, which she (though vniustly) termes loue: that she is all in teares, sighes, and lamentable exclamations: she knowes it impossible for any other of the world to be the reuealer of *Syponius* his Letter, but onely her Mayd *Felicia*, whom in her vncharitable revenge, she curseth to the pit of hell: but that which addes a greater torment to her torments, and a more sensible degree of affliction to her miserable sorrowes, is, to see that her *Syponius* (whom by many degrees she loues farre dearer then her life) sinisterly suspecteth her

her fidelity towards him : yea so farre, as he not onely calls her affection, but her trechery in question : and this indeed seemes to drowne her in her teares. But yet notwithstanding so seruent is her loue towards him, as the feare of his deathdrawes her to a resolution of her owne : so if Sypontus dye, she vowes she will be her owne accuser, and so not liue, but dye with him. Strange effects of loue, or rather of folly, sith loue being irregular, and taking false obiects, ( in its true character) is not loue, but folly : to which end, calling for inke and paper, she bitterly weeping, indites and sends him these few lines, in answere of his.

**I** Were the most wretched and ingratefulllest Lady of the world ; yea a Lady who shouldest not then deserue either to see or liue in the world, if Victoria should any way prove trecherous to Sypontus, who hath still beeene so true and kind to her. But beleue me, Deare Sypontus, and I speake it in presence of God, upon perill of my soule, I am as innocent as that witch, that diuell, my maid Felicia is guilty of the producing of thy Letter, which I feare will prooue thy death, and reioyce that in it, it shall likewise prooue mine. For to cleare my selfe of ingratitude and treachery, as I haue liued, so I will dye with thee : that as we mutually participated the ioyes of life, so we may the torments of death : for althoough thy letter accuse me not of my Husband Souranza's murther, yet that my affection may shine in my loyalty, and that in my affection, I will not suruiue, but dye with thee : for I will accuse my selfe to my judges, not onely as accessary, but as author of that murther : and this resolution of mine I write thee with teares, and will shortly seal it with my blood.

VICTORYNA.

*Sypontus*, in the middest of his perplexities and sorrowes, receiuies this Letter from *Victoryna*, the sweetnesse of whose affection and constancy, much reviuies his ioy, and comforteth him. For now her innocency defaceth his suspition of her ingratitude and treachery: and withall, he plainly sees, and truly beleuees, that it was *Felicia*, not *Victoryna*, who brought this letter to light. But when hee descends to the latter part of her Letter, and findes her resolution to dye with him, then he condemnes his former envour in taxing her, and in requitall, loues her so tenderly and dearely, that hee vowes he will be so farre from accusing her, as accessary of her husbands murther, as both the Racke, and his death shall cleare and proclaime her innocency. Had the grounds of these feruent and reciprocall affectiōns of *Victoryna* and *Sypontus*, been laid in vertue, as they were in vice; or in chastity, and not in lust and adultery, they would haue giuen cause to the whole world, as iustly to praise, as now to dispraise them, and then to haue been as ambitious of their imitation, as now of their contempt and detestation.

So *Sypontus* (as before) hauing fully and definitiue-  
ly resolued not to accuse, but to cleare *Victoryna* of this  
murther, as also that he would dye alone, and leaue her  
youth and beauty to the inioying of many more earth-  
ly pleasures: he expecting hourly to be sent for before  
his Judges, to sit vpon his torment or death, thinking  
himselfe bound both in affection and honour, to signifie  
*Victoryna* his pleasure herein, hee craues his Taylors  
absence, and with much affection and passion, writes  
her this his last Letter:

Sweet

Sweet Victoryna, thy Letter hath giuen me so full satisfaction, as I repent me of my rash credulity, conceiued against thy affection and constancy, and now lay the fault of the discouery of my Letter, where it is, and ought to bee, on Felicia, not on thy selfe. It is with a sorrowfull, but true pre-sage, that I foresee, my life hastens to her period: the Racke is already prepared for my torments, & I hourely expect when I shall be fetch'd, to receiue them, which for thy sake I will imbrace and suffer, with as much constancy as patience: I will deny mine owne guiltinesse the first time, but not the second: but in my torments and death I will acquit thee of thine, with as true a resolution, as Earth expects to lose me, and I hope to finde Heauen. Therefore by all the bonds of loue and affection that euer haue been betweene vs, I first pray, then coniure thee to change thy resolution, and to stand on thine innocency. For if thou wilt, or desirest to gratifie me with thy last affection and courtesie at my death; let mee beare this one content and ioy to my graue, that Victoryna will liue for Sypontus his sake, though Sypontus dye for hers.

## SYPONTVS.

He had no sooner sent away this his Letter to Victoryna, but he himselfe is sent for to appeare before his Judges, who vpon his second examination and denyall, adiudge him to the Racke; which he endures with admirable patience and constancy. Yea, he cannot be drawne to confess, but stands firme in his deniall, and not onely cleeres himselfe, but also acquits Victoryna: Hieronymo Souranza doth notwithstanding earnestly follow and sollicite the Judges, and God, out of his immense mercy and profound prouidence so ordaineth, that

that their consciences suggest and prompt them, that *Syponentus* is the actor of this execrable murther. Wherfore the next day they administer him double torment: when lo, his resolution and strength failing him, he acknowledgeth the Letter his, & confesseth it was himself that had murdered *Seignior Iuan Battista Souranza*: but withall protesteth constantly that *Victoryna* is innocent, and no way accessory hereunto. The Judges reioyce at *Syponentus* his confession, as much as they grieue at the foulenesse of his fact: and so, although they were also desirous to hang him, yet considering hee was a *Venacian Gentleman*, (and consequently had a voyce in the great Councell of the *Seignory*,) they adiudge him the next day to lose his head, betwixt the two *Columnnes* at Saint *Markes Place*, and so for that night send him backe to his prison, to prepare himselfe to dye. *Syponentus* is no sooner departed from them, but they consult on *Victoryna*, whether shewere guilty, or innocent of her husband *Souranza*'s murther, but they differ in opinion: some would likewise haue her rack-ed: but others of them more aduised and modest, reply, that *Syponentus* his Letter intimated onely his affection to *Victoryna*, but no way her malice to her dead husband *Souranza*, nor that she was any way guilty or accessory to his murther: so they resolute to forbear her, and not to put her to the torment, except *Syponentus* accuse her at his execution. Now the very night that he was to dye the next morne, hee infinitely desires his Iaylor to permit him to conferre with *Victoryna*, and to take his last leaue of her, which is denied him, as hausing receiued command from authority to the contrary; whereat extremely grieuing, hee is called away

away by some Diuines, whom the charity of that graue Senate send him, to prepare and direct his soule, in her passage and transmigration to *Heauen*. So passing the night in teares and prayers for the soulenesse of his crime, the morne being come, and nine of the clocke stricken, hee is brought to the scaffold, where a world of people concurre and flocke from all parts of the City, to see this wretched and vnfornatuate Gentleman act the last Scene and part of his life vpon this infamous Theater. Heere *Syponius* freely confesseth his foule murther of *Souranza*, but is yet so vaine and wretched, as he takes it to his death, that *Victoryna* is absolutely innocent heerof: hee seemes to bee very repentant and sorrowfull for all his sinnes in generall, and for this murther in particular.

For expiation and reward hereof, his head is seuered from his body: a iust recompence and punishment for so vicious and bloody a Gentleman, who adhering to adulterie more then chastity, to reuenge, then charity, and to the diuell, then *God*, forgot himselfe so farre, as to commit this execrable and lamentable murther.

Now, the order and *Decorum* of our *Histroy*, leades vs from dead *Syponius*, to liuing *Victoryna*, who, I know not whether more grieue at his death, or reioyce, that on the Racke and scaffold he hath acquitted her of her husbands murther. In a word, it is remarkable to behold the vanity & inconstancy of this female Monster: for contrary to her vowed, and repugnant to her Letters and teares, *Syponius* is no sooner dead, but her affection towards him dyes with him: yea, his blood is scarce so soone cold, as her zeale and friendship: for she

now holds it a pure folly to cast away her youth, and life, if she may preserue the one, and saue the other; and therefore resolues to try her best art and wit, to make her innocency passe currant with her Judges: yea, so desirous and ambitious is shee to liue, as her female heart hath drawne on this masculine fortitude and generosity, that if occasion present, shee will constantly both out-dare, and out-braue the torments of the Racke, thereby to prevent her death.

Some three dayes after *Syponentus* was executed, the *Judges* againe sit and consult on *Victoryna*, but finding no euidence nor witnessse to accuse her, they at first are of opinion to discharge and free her: onely they deeme it requisite to terrifie, but not to torment her with the Racke, before they gitie her her liberty: whereunto they all agree. So they send for her, and threaten her with the Racke: but shee vowes, that all the torments of the world shall never inforce her to confesse an vniȝt, and that shee never had the least suspition that *Syponentus* was guilty of the execrable murther of her husband: her *Judges* will not yet beleue her; so they cause her to be carried to the Racke: whereunto shee very cheerfully and patiently permits her selfe to bee fastened, bidding the Executioner doe his worst: which constancy of hers, her *Judges* seeing and hearing, they, in pitty and commiseration, as well of her youth and beauty, as to her descent, and the teares and prayers of venerable old *Beraldus* her father, cause her to be loosed, and so in open Court acquite and discharge her.

Here we see this wretched *Courtisana* *Victoryna* acquitted of her *Judges* for her husbands murther, so as triumphing

triumphing more in her good fortune, then her innocency, she now thinkes the storme of her punishment past and ore-blowne, and that no future can possibly be reserued for her, or shee for it: but her hopes will deceiue her: for although shee haue made her peace with *Earth*, yet she hath not with *Heauen*; and although she haue deluded the eyes of her *Judges*, yet shee shall not those of *God*; but when his appoynted houre, and her due time is come, then her crimes and sinnes, her adultery and murther shall draw downe vengeance from *beauen* to her confusion. In the meane time wee shall see this Monster and disgrace of her sexe, make such bad vse of her former danger, as shee will againe adde blood to blood, and murther to murther: but *God* will reserue not onely the rod of his wrath for her correction, but the full viols of his indignation for her confusion; as the sequell will shew thee.

Sixe moneths are scarce past, since the murther of her husband *Souranza*, and the execution of her *Enamorata Syponius*, but shee hath already quite forgotten these two mournfull and tragical accidents: and which is more, she is so frolick and youthfull, as shee hath throwne off her mourning attire, and drawne on her rich apparell, and glittering iewels, whereof the curiositie of the nobler sort of *Gentlemen* and *Ladies* of the *City* take exact obseruation: and although *Beraldi* and *Lucia*, her father and mother herein taxe her of indiscretion and immodesty, yet shee thinks her selfe exempt of their commands, and therefore will doe it, out of the ambitious priuiledge of her owne vncontrollable authority and wilfulness. Besides, her thoughts are so youthfull, and her carriage so light;

notwithstanding she came (as it were) but now from  
burying of her first husband, yet she is resolued with-  
out delay, to haue a second : her father and mother  
checke her of leuity and inciuility in imbracing this  
resolution : but in vaine : for her impudency returnes  
them this immodest answere, that shee will not trifle  
away her time, but marry. They aduize her to be cau-  
tious, and to doe nothing rashly in this her second  
match, that the misfortune and scandall of her first,  
may no more reflect on her. But she will make choyce  
for her selfe by the eyes of her youth, and not by thise  
of their age ; by those of her owne fancy, and not by  
these of their election. Her Husband *Souranza* dyed  
rich, both in lands and moneyes, and his Widdow  
*Victoryna*, without any opposition, inioyeth all : so she  
needs not looke out for Suters, for there are *Gallants*  
enow who sue and seeke her: but of them all, he whom  
she best and chiefly affeceth, is one *Seignior Loudonius*  
*Fassino*, a very neat and proper young Gentleman of  
the City, rich, and well descended; his parents and  
kinsmen for the most part being *Clarissimo's* and *Senato-*  
*ryna* desires, and resolues to make her husband, ground-  
ing her chiefeſt reason and affection on this resolu-  
tion and foundation, that as *Souranza* was too old for  
her, so *Fassino* was young enough, and therefore fit to  
be her husband, and she his wife; measuring him whol-  
ly by his exterior personage, and not so much as once  
prying either into his vices or vertues. *Fassino*, who  
carried a vicious and pernicious heart vnder a plea-  
ſing gesture and tongue, and louing *Victoryna's* wealth  
more then her beauty, obſeruing her affection and re-  
ſpect

spect to him, seekes, courts, and wins her. Her Parents understanding hereof, as also that *Fafino* is a vicious, and debosh't Gentleman, with all their possible power and authority, they seeke to diuert their daughter from him. But shee is deafe to their requests, and resolute, that as shee followed the stremme of their commands in her first match, so shee will now the current of her owne pleasures and affections in this her second: and so, to the wonder of *Venice*, and the grieve of all her parents and friends, before shee had aboue ten dayes conferred with *Fafino*, shee marries him. But this match shall not succeed according to their desires: for *Victoryna* shall shortly repent it, and *Fafino* as soone rue and smart for it; sith it is a *maxime*; that sudden affections prooue seldomie prosperous: for if they haue not time to settle and take roote, they are incident as soone to fade as flourish, especially if they are contracted and grounded more for lust then loue, and more for wealth then Vertue.

The first moneth of this marriage<sup>3</sup>, *Fafino* keepes good correspondence and obseruance with his wife, but thence forth hee breakes Pale, and rangeth: for the truth is, although hee were but a young Gentleman; yet (which is lamentable) he was an old whoremaster: which lasciuious profession of his, threatens the ruine, not onely of his health, but of his fortune and reputation: so now, when he shoulde be at home, he is abroad; yea, not onely by day, but by night, that vpon the whole, *Victoryna* is more a Widdow then a Wife: at which vnlook'd and vnwifh'd for newes, she not onely bites the lip, but very often puts finger in her eye and weepes: for it gripes and grieues her at

heart , to see her selfe thus slighted , neglected , and abus'd by *Fafino* : whom , of all the Gallants of the Cittie , she had elected and chosen for her husband : shée is infinitely grieu'd hereat , and yet her grieve and sorrow infinitely exceeds her ialousie : and now as gracelesse as shē is , shē thinks God hath purposely sent her this lasciuious *Fafino* for her second Husband , as a iust plague and punishment , to reuenge her adultery committed against *Souranza* her first : so , had shē had more grace , and lesse vanity and impiety , shē would haue made better vse of this consideration , and not so soone forgotten it , and in it , her selfe .

Now as it is the nature of ialousie , to haue more eyes then *Argus* , and so to pry and see euery where : *Victoryna* , her curiositie , or rather her malice herein , findes out , that her Husband *Fafino* familiarly frequenteth and vseth the company of many *Curtezans* , especially of the Lady *Paleriana* , one of the most famous and reputed beauties of *Venice* : and this newes indeed strikes her at the very gall with sorrow and vexation ; faine shē would reforme and remedy this vice of her Husband : but how shē knowes not , for shē sees little or no hope to reclaime him , sith hee not onely tenderly loues *Paleriana* , but which is worse , shē apparantly sees , that for hersake , he contemnes her selfe and her company : for when he comes home , hee hath no delight in her , but only in his Lute or Books , which is but to passe his melancholly , for his Lady *Paleriana's* absence , till hee againe reuilit her : so as wholly neglected , and as I may truly say , almost forsaken of her Husband , shē knowes not what to doe , nor how to beare her selfe in those furious stormes of her grieve , and

and miserable tempest of her icalousie. But of two different courses to reclaime him from this his sinne of Whoredome, shee takes the worst: for in stead of counselling and dissuading her Husband, shee torments him with a thousand scandalous and iniurious speeches: but this,in stead of quenching, doth but only bring oyle to the flame of his lust: for if he repaired home to her seldome before, now hee scarce at all comes neare her: so as shee is a Wife; yet no Wife: and hath a Husband, yet no Husband: but this is not the way to reclaime him, for faire speeches and sweet exhortations may preuaile, when choller cannot.

And now it is,that this wretched & execrable *Lady* againe assumes bloody resolutions against her second Husband,as she had formerly done against her first, vowing that he shall dye, ere she will liue to bee thus contemned and abused of him: yea, her hot loue to him is so soone growne cold, and her feruent affectiōn already so frozen,that now she thinkes on nothing else but how to be revenged, and to be rid of him; and is so impious and gracielesse,as she cares not how, nor in what manner soever she send him from this world to another: for the diuell hath drawne a resolution from her,or rather she from the diuell, that heere he shall not much longer liue. *Good God!* what an impious and wretched fury of hell will *Victoryna* proue her selfe heere on *Earth*? for the blood and life of one husband cannot quench the thirst of her lust and reuenge, but shee must and will imbrue her hands in that of two: as if it were not enough for her to trot, but that she will needs gallop and ride poast to hell. O what pitty is it to see a *Lady* so wretched, and  
exc-

execrable! O what an execrable wretchednesse is it, to see a *Lady* so inhumane, and so deuoyd of pitty! But the diuell is strong with her, because her faith is weake with *God*: therefore she will aduance, she will not retire, in this her bloody designe and resolution. Wherefore we shall shortly see *Fafino* his adultery punished with death, by his wife *Victoryna's* reuenge; and this murther of hers iustly rewarded and reuenged with the punishment of her owne: the bloodier our actions are, the seuerer Gods iudgements, and the sharper his reuenge will be.

Of all sorts and degrees of inhumane and violent deaths, this wretched *Lady Victoryna* thinkes poysone the surest, and yet the most secret to dispatch her husband. This inuention came immediately from the diuell, and is onely practised by his members: of which number shee will desperately and damnable make her selfe one: her lust and reuenge, like miserable aduocates and fatall Orators, perfwade her to this execrable attempt, wherein by cutting off her husbands life, shee shall finde that shee likewise casts away her owne. So neither *Grace* nor *Nature* preuailing, shee sends for an *Apothecary*, named *Augustino*; and when shee hath coniured, and he promised his secretie, shee acquaints him, that her new husband *Fafino* keepes *Courtisans* to her nose, and daily and hourely offereth her many other insupportable abuses and disgraces; in requitall and reuenge whereof shee is resoluued to poysone him, and prayes him to vndertake and performe it, and that shee will reward him with three hundred *Zekynes* for his labour.

Of all professions and faculties, there are good and bad,

bad: *Augustino* loues God too well, heerein to obey the diuell: he hath too much grace, to bee so impious and gracelesse, and vowes that hee will not buy gold at so deare a rate, as the price of blood; so as a good *Christian*, and true child of God, he not onely refuseth *Victoryna's* motion and proffer, but in religious termes seekes to diuert and perswade her from this her bloody attempt. But she is resolute in her malice, and wilfull in her reuenge, and therefore will performe it her selfe, sith this *Augustino* will not: so (by a second hand) she procures poyon from a strange *Emperike*, whereof the *City of Venice*, more then other of *Italy*, aboundeth: so shee onely waits for an opportunity, which very shortly, though, *ales*, too too soone, presents it selfe, the manner thus:

It is impossible that *Fafino* his dissolute life and extreme deboshing can keepe him long from sicknesse; for this punishment is alwayes incident and hereditary to that sinne. Hee complaines thereof to his wife *Victoryna*, who receiuers this newes rather with gladnesse then commiseration and pitty: and so taking his bed, he prayes her to make hym some comfortable hot broth for his stomacke: which newes shee heares, and imbraceth inwardly with ioy, outwardly with disdaine. For albeit she layes hold of this opportunity to poysone him, yet she dissembles her malice; and the better to colour her villany, because shee knowes it the smoother and shorter way to bee reuenged in poysoning him, she wil not make the broth her selfe, but commands her maid *Felicia* to doe it, (of whom we haue formerly spoken, in the discouery of *Syphantus* his Letter to her *Vnkle Hieronymio Souranza*: ) which trecherous

rous office of hers, our malicious and diuellish *Victoryna* her *Lady* and Mistrisse, hath now a plot in her head, to requite with an execrable and hellish recompence: for whiles *Felicia* is boyling of the broth, her *Lady Victoryna* trips to her chamber and closet, and fethceth out the poyson, inueloped in a paper, wherof she takes two parts and brings downe with her, and whiles she had purposely sent *Felicia* from the fire, she runnes and throwes it into the broth, which for the present no whit altered the colour thereof: so *Fafino* calling for it, this poore innocent Gentlewoman *Felicia*, (not suspecting or dreaming of poyson) giues it him, which (as ignorant thereof) hee suppes vp; and this was about nine or ten of the clocke in the morning.

Now whiles *Felicia* is acting this mournfull *Tragedy* in *Fafino* his chamber, her *Lady Victoryna* is acting another in hers; for shee takes the other third part of the poyson, and secretly opening *Felicia*'s trunke, puts it into a painted boxe which shee found therein, and so lockes it againe, hoping (though indeed with a wretched and hellish hope) that her husband being dead, his body opened, and the poyson found in her trunke, she would giue out that *Felicia* had poysoned him with broth that mornie, and this found in her chest, would make her guilty of the murther; for the which she knew shee must needs dye. See, see, the diuellish double malice of this wretched *Lady Victoryna*, as well to her husband *Fafino*, as her maid *Felicia*! But as finely as the diuell hath taught her to spinne the thred of this her malice and reuenge; yet though her plot haue taken effect and hold of her husband, nevertheless

thelesse she shall in the end faile of hers to innocent Felicia: in the interim, though to the eyes of the world it seeme at first to succeed according to her desires by the bye, yet it shall not in the maine: but that murther, and this treason of *Victoryna* shall not goe long either vndetected, or vnpunished.

This poysone working in *Fafino* his stomacke and body, begins by degrees to cut off his vitall spirits, so as his strength failes him, his red cheeke already look pale and earthly, and his body infinitely swells; he calls for his wife *Victoryna*, who with all hast and expeditiōn tells her secretly, that he feares, *Felicia* hath poysoned him with the broth shēe gaue him in the morning; and so requesteth her to send for his parents and friends to bee present at his death, for liue hee could not. *Victoryna* like a dissembling she-diuell, teares her haire for anger, and for meere sorrow seemes to drowne her selfe in her teares at this newes, kissteth and fawnes on her husband, and in all possible haste sends away of all fides for his kinsfolkes and friends, who hastily repaire thither, and finde *Fafino* almost dead: so they, with teares, inquire his sicknesse, when with open voyce his wife *Victoryna* cries out, that her wretched maid *Felicia* had with broth, that morne, poysoned him; which *Fafino* his memory and tongue yet serue him to confessē and auerre, word for word, as his wife *Victoryna* had related them: whereat they are all sorrowfull, and weepe, and then, and there cause *Felicia* to be apprehended and slaut fast in a chamber; who (poore harmelesse young *Gentlenoman*) is amazed at the terour and strangenesse of this newes, and cries out and weepes so bitterly, as she seemes to melt

her selfe into teares, onely shée knowes her selfe innocent, and yet feares that this malice and revenge proceeds to her from her *Lady Victورyna*. Whiles *Felicia* is thus vnder sure keeping, her Master *Fafino*-dyes: which newes is soone dispersed and divulged abroad, to the grieve and admiration of the whole City. The next mome the *criminall Judges* are aduertised hereof, who repaire to *Fafino* his house, who by this time is dead, and there see his breathlesse carkasse, which they ordaine to be opened: the poysen is apparantly found on his stomacke, in its naturall and pristine colour, when examining first *Fafino*, then *Victورyna*'s parents, they report *Fafino* his owne words vttered a little before his death, that *Felicia* had that more poisoned him with broth: which is auerred by *Victorina*, who saith, she saw her give it him. So they send away poore *Felicia* to prison, but yet with a vehement suspition, that this poysoned arrow came out of *Victورyna* her owne quiuier, which they the sooner beleue, in respect of her former troubles, and suspition for the murther of her first husband *Souranza*: so the *Judges* returne and betake themselues, that very instant, to their *Tribunall of Justice*, in the *Dukes Palace of Saint Markes*: where they send for *Felicia*, who is brought them, vnaccompained of any: for as misfortune would, both her Vnkle *Hieronymo*, and her Cousin *Andrea Souranza*, were then at *Corfu*, employed in some publike affaires for the *Seignory*. The *Judges* examine *Felicia*, concerning the broth and poysen she gaue her Master. Shee bitterly sighing and weeping, confesseth the broth, but denyes the poysen; vowed by her part and hope of *Heaven*, she never touched nor knew what poysen was, and desired

fired no fauor of thē, if it were found or proued against her; withall, she acquaints thē, y she feares it is a tricke of malice & reuenge, clapt on her by her *Lady Victoryna*, for the discouery of *Syponius* his letter. And to speak truth, the *Judges* in their hearts partly adhere & concur with her in this opinion: they demand her whether her *Lady Victoryna* touched this broth, either by the fire or the bed? She, according to the truth, answeres, that to her knowledge or sight, she touched it not, nor no other but her selfe. So they send her againe to prison, and returne speedily to *Fassino* his house; where committing *Victoryna* to a sure guard, they ascend her chamber and closet, search all her trunkes, caskets and boxes, for poyson, but finde none: and the like they doe to *Felicia*'s trunkes, which they breake open, shee hauing the key; and in a boxe finde a quantity of the same poyson, whereby it was apparent she absolutely poysoned her Master *Fassino*. The *Judges* hauing thus found out and reuealed, as they thought, the true author of this murther, they descend, againe examine *Victoryna*, and so acquit her. Poore *Felicia* is aduertised hereof; wherat she is amazed & astonisched, and thinks that some witch or diuel castit there for her destrucciō. She is again sent for before her *Judges*, who produce the poyson found in her trunke: she denyes both the poyson and the murther, with many sighes & teares: so they adiuge her to the racke, which torment she suffereth with much patience and constancy; notwithstanding, her *Judges* considering that she made and gaue *Fassino* the broth, that none touched it but her selfe, that he dyed of it, and that they found the remainder of the poyson in her trunke, they think her the murtherer; so they pronounce

nounce sentence, that the next morne shée shall bee hanged at *S. Markes* place. She poore soule is returned to her prison; she bewailes her misfortune thus to die, and be cast away innocently, taxing her Judges of iniustice, as her soule is ready to answere it to God.

All *Venice* prattleth of this cruell murther committed by this yong *Gentlewoman*; but for her Lady *Victoryna*, she triumphs and laughs like a Gypsey, to see how with one stome she hath giuen two strokēs, and how one poore drug hath freed her this day of her husband *Fassino*, and will to morrow of *Felicia*, of whom she reioyceth in her selfe, that now shée hath cryed quittance for the discouery of *Syponius* his Letter, which procured his death: but her hopes may deceiue her, or rather, the diuell will deceiue both her and her hopes too. How true or false, righteous or sinfull our actions be, *God* in his due time will make them appeare in their naked colours, and reward those with glory, and these with shame.

The next morne, according to the laudable custome of *Venice*, the mourners of the *Seignory* accompany our sorrowfull *Felicia* to the place of execution, where she modestly ascendeth the ladder, with much silencē, pensiuenesse and affliction: at the sight of whose youth and beauty, most of that great infinity of spectators cannot refraine from teares, and commiserating and pitying, that so sweet a young *Gentlewoman* should come to so infamous and vntimely a death: when *Felicia* lifting vp her hands, and erecting her eyes and heart towards *Heauen*, she briefly speakes to this effect: she takes *Heauen* and *Earth* to witnesse that she is innocent of the poysoning of her Master *Fassino*, and ignorant

ignorant how that poysone should be brought into her trunke, that as her knowledge cannot accuse, so her conscience will not acquite her *Lady Victoryna* of that fact, onely shee leaues the detection and iudgement thereof to God, that being ready to forsake the world, sith the world is resolued to forsake her, shee as much triumphs in her innocency, as grieues at her misfortune:and that she may not onely appeare in *Earth*,but be found in *Heauen* a true *Christian*, shee first forgives her *Lady Victoryna*,and her *Judges*, and then beseecheth *God* to forgiue her all her sinnes; whereunto shee humbly and heartily prayes all that are present, to adde their prayers to hers:and so she begins to take off her band, and to prepare her selfe to dye.

Now, *Christian Reader*, what humane wisedome, or earthly capacity would here conceiue or thinke, that there were any sublunary meanes left for this comfortlesse *Gentlewoman Felicia*, either to hope for life, or to flatter her selfe that she could auoyd death? But lo, as the children of *God* cannot fall,because he is the defender of the innocent, and the protector of the righteous, therefore we shall see to our comforts, and finde to *Gods* glory , that this innocent young *Gentlewoman* shall be miraculously freed of her dangers and punishment , and her inueterate Arch-enemie *Victoryna* brought in her stead, to receiue this shaniefull death, in expiation of the horrible murthers of her two husbands , which *God* will now discouer , and make apparent to the eyes of the world : for as the *Fryers* and *Nunnes* prepare *Felicia*, to take her last farewell of this world , and so to shut vp her life in the direfull and mournfull *Catastrophe* of her death ; Behold , by the prouidence

prouidence and mercy of God, the Apothecarie *Augustino* (of whom this our *History* hath formerly made an honest and religious mention) arriues from *Cape Istria*: and hauing left his ship at *Malmocco*, lands in a *Gondola* at *Saint Markes stayres*; when knowing and seeing an execution towards, hee thrusts himselfe in amongst the crowd of people: where beholding so young and so faire a Gentlewoman, ready to die: hee demands of those next by him, what shee was, and her crime: when being answered, that her name was *Felicia*, a wayting Gentlewoman to the *Lady Victورyna*, who had poysoned her Master *Fassino*: at the very first report of the names of *Victورyna*, and her husband *Fassino*, *Augustino* his blood flasheth vp in his face, and his heart began to beat within him, when demanding if no other were accessary to this murther: he was informed, that her *Lady Victورyna* was vehemently suspected thereof: but shee was cleared, and onely *Felicia*, this young Gentlewoman, found guilty therof: which words were no sooner deliuered him, but God putting into his heart and remembrance, that this *Lady Victورyna* would haue formerly seduced him for three hundred *Zeckynes*, to haue poysoned her husband *Fassino*, hee confidently beleevuing this young Gentlewoman innocent hereof, with all possible speed, as fast as his legges could drieue, he runnes vp to the Southeast part of the corner of the *Gallery* of the *Dukes Palace*, where the Officers sit to see Execution done; the which hee requesteth for that time to stop, because he hath something to say concerning the murther of *Sigour Fassino*. Whereupon they call out to the Executioner to forbear: which bred infinite admiration in all the

Specta-

Spectators, as wondering at the cause and reason ther-of, when in constant and discreet termes, *Augustino* informes the *Judges*, that he thinkes *Felicia* innocent, and her *Lady Victoryna* guilty of this murther, and so relates them the manner, time, and place, where *Victoryna* her selfe seduced him to poysen her Husband *Fafino*, how she proffered him three hundred *Zekynes* to performe it, which he refused, and to the vtmost of his power, fought to dissuade her from this bloody and execrable businesse. The *Judges* are astonished at the strangenessse of this newes, which they begin confidently to beleue, and so blesse the houre of *Augu-stino's* arriuall, that hath withheld them from spilling the innocent blood of *Felicia*, when commanding her from the place of execution, to her prison, they instantly giue order for the *Lady Victoryna's* apprehension, who already had built *tropees* and *triumphes* of ioy in her heart, to see that all her bloody desigues so well succeeded. But now is the *Lords* appoynted time come, wherein all her cruell murthers, whoredome, trechery, and hypocrisie, shall be brought to light and punished: yea now it shall no longer be in her power, or in that of the diuell, her Schoole-master and Seducer, either to diminish the least part of her punishment, or to adde the least moment or poynt of time to her life. She is all in teares at her apprehension, but they rather ingender enuie, then pity in her *Judges*: And so from the delights and pleasures of her house, she is hastily conueyed to prison.

Her *Judges*, in honour to the sacred dignitie of *Justice* (the *Queene of Earth*, and the daughter of *Heaven*) confront her with *Augustino*, who auerres his former de-

position, as constantly in her face, as she denies it impudently in his. But this will not preuaile her : for now *God* hath made the probabilities, or rather the sight of her crime too apparent. So without any regard to her prayers, teares, or exclamations, they adiuge her to the Rake, where the tenderness of her limbes, the sharpenesse of her tormentes, but especially the grieses and pinches of her conscience, make her acquit *Felicia*, acknowledge *Augustino* his euidence, and condemne her selfe to bee the author both of her first husbands stabbing, as also her seconds poysoning; her Judges as much praise *God* for her confession, as they detest and are astonished at the falsenesse of these her horrible crimes. So with much ioy they first free innocent *Felicia* of her vniust imprisonment; and then knowing it pitty that so wretched a Lady as *Victoryna* should liue any longer, they, for her abominable cruelties and inhumanities, condemne her the next morne to be hanged and burnt on Saint *Markes Place*. At the knowledge and divulging of which newes, as her father, mother, and kinsfolkes extremely grieve, so all *Venice* bleffe and glorfie *God*, first, that innocent *Felicia* is saued, and guilty *Victoryna* detected and condemned to the shame and punishment of a deserued death.

The same night the *Priests* and *Friers* deale with her about the state of her soule, and its pilgrimage and transmigration to heauen: they fiade that her youth, lust, and reuenge hath taken a strange possession of the diuell, and he in them: for she still loues the memory of *Syphorus*, and enuies and detests that of her two husbands, *Souranza* and *Fafino*: but they deale effectually

ally with her, and in their speeches depainting her forth the ioyes of heauen, and the torments of hell, they at last happily preuaile, & so make her forsake the vanity and impiety of these her passions, by relishing the sweet shewres of Gods mercies : so the next morne she is brought to her execution ; where the world expecting to heare much matter from her, shee is very pensiue and contemplatiue, and sayes little, onely she prayes *Felicia* to forgiue her ; as also all the Parents of her two Husbands, *Souranza* and *Fafino*, and likewise of *Syponius* ; but chiefly she inuokes *God*, her *Saviour* and *Redeemer*, to pardon these her horrible sins of adultery and murther, and beseecheth all that are present to pray for her soule ; and so according to her sentence, she is first hanged, then burnt : whereat all that great affluence and concourse of people praise the prouidence and iustice of *God*, in cutting off this female monster and shame of her sexe *Victoryna*: whose tragical and mournfull History may we all reade and remeber, with detestation, that the example hereof be our forewarning and caueat, not to trust in the deceiuable lusts of the flesh, and the trecherous tentations of the diuell, but to rely on the mercies and promises of *God*, which wil never faile his elect, but will assuredly make them happy in their liues, blessed in their deathes, and consequently glorious in their resurrections.



THE  
TRIVMPHS OF  
GODS REVENGE AGAINST  
the crying and execrable sinne  
of Murther.

History VII.

Catalina causeth her wayting Mayd Ansilua, two severall times attempt to poison her owne sister Berinthia, where-  
in failing, she afterwards makes an Emperike termed  
Sarmiata, poison her said Mayd Ansilua: Catalina is  
killed with a thunderbolt, and Sarmiata hanged for  
poisoning Ansilua: Antonio steales Berinthia away by  
her owne consent; whereupon her brother Sebastiano  
fights with Antonio, and kills him in a Duell: Berin-  
thia, in reuenge hereof, afterwards murthereth her bro-  
ther Sebastiano: she is adiudged to be immur'd twixt  
two walles, and there dies:

**H**ow foolishly and impiously doth our  
malice betray our selues, or the diuell  
our soules, when we maliciously think to  
betray others! for wee are as farre from  
Grace as wisedome, when we permit either  
irregular

irregular affection, or vnlawfull passion, to hale vs on to choller, choller to reuenge, and reuenge to murther: Nay, how exempt are we of *Religion*, and deuoyd of all Christian piety and charity, when our thoughts are so eclipsed, and our iudgements darkned, when our consciences are so defiled, and our soules polluted with reuenge, that the eldeſt ſiſter ſeekes to poyſon her younger, and this younger afterwards murthereth her owne and onely brother, because in a *Duell* hee had formerly killed her Louer! *Alaffe, alaffe*: theſe are bloody accidents, which not onely fight againſt *Grace*, but *Nature*, not onely againſt *Earth*, but *Heauen*, and not onely againſt our soules, but againſt *God*: neither are theſe the onely Tragedies that this our ensuing *Hiftorie* reporteth, or relateth: for wee ſhall therein farther ſee a wretched wayng Gentlewoman, poyſoned by her more wretched Lady and Miftreſſe, together with her execrable Agent, a bloody and graceleſſe Emperike: and all iuſtly reuenged, and ſeuerely puniſhed by the ſword of Gods wrath and indignation: wherein the Christian *Reader* may obſerue, as well to Gods glory, as his owne conſolation, that neuer pretended, or actuall murthers were either contrived more ſecretly, perpetratiſt more cloſely, deteſted more miraculously, or puniſhed more ſtrangeſly or ſeuerely: ſo as if the diuell haue not fully poſſeffed our hearts and soules; or if our thoughts and reſoluſions doe yet retaine but the leaſt ſparke of *Grace* and *Christianity*: we ſhall flie their crimes by the feare and fight of their punishments; refetch our wandering and erroneous ſenſes, from hell to earth, purpoſely to erraſe them from Earth to *Heauen*; and ſo religiouſly

to giue and consecrate , both them , and our selues ,  
and soules , from sinne to righteousnesse , and conse-  
quently (with as much felicity as glory ) from Satan  
to God .

There dwelt in the Citie of *Auero* in *Portugall* , an  
ancient Nobleman , termed *Don Gaspar de Vilarezo* ,  
rich in either quality of earthly greatnessse , as well of  
blood as reuerewes , who was neerely allied to the  
*Marquesse of Denia* (in *Spaine*) as marrying a Neecc  
of his named *Dona Alphanta* , a Lady exquisitely endued  
with the Ornaments of *Nature* , and the perfections  
of *Grace* : for she was both faire and vertuous , that ad-  
ding lustre to these , and these returning and refle&ting  
embelishment to that , which made her infinitely be-  
loued of her husband *Vilarezo* , and exceedingly ho-  
noured of all those who had the honour to know her ;  
and to crowne the felicity of their affections and mar-  
riage , they had three hopefull children , one son , and  
two daughters : he termed *Don Sebastiano* , and they the  
*Donas Catalina* , and *Berinthia* : he hauing attained his  
fifteenth yeere , was by his Father made Page to *Count*  
*Manriques de Lopez* , and continually followed him  
at *Court* , and they from their tenth to their thirteenth  
yeeres , liued sometimes at *Coimbra* : otherwhiles at  
*Lisbone* , but commonly at *Auero* with their Parents ,  
who so carefully trayned them vp in those qualities  
and perfections , requisite for Ladies of their ranke , as  
they were no sooner seene , but admired of all who  
saw them .

But before wee make a farther progreffion in this  
History ; (thereby the better to vnfold and anatomize  
it) I hold it rather necessary then impertinent , that we  
take

take a cursory, though not a curious suruey of both these young Ladys perfections and imperfections, of their vices and vertues, their beauty and deformity: that as obiects are best knowne by the opposition of their contraries: so by the way of comparison wee may distinguishe how to know, and know how to distinguishe the disparity of these two sisters, in their inclinations, affections, and delineations.

*Catalina* was somewhat short of stature, but corpulent of body: *Berinthia* tall, but slender: *Catalina* was of taint and complexion, more browne then faire: *Berinthia* not browne, but sweetly faire, or fairly sweet: *Catalina* had a disdainsfull, *Berinthia* a gracious eye: *Catalina* was proud, *Berinthia* humble. In a word, *Catalina* was of humour extremely imperious, ambitious, and revengefull, and *Berinthia* modestly courteous, gracious, and religious. So these two young Ladies growing now to bee capable of marriage, many gallant *Cavaliers* of *Auero* become Seruants and Suters to them, as well in respect of their fathers Nobility and wealth, as for their owne beauties and vertues: yea their fame is generally so spred, that from *Lisbone*, and most of the chiefest *Cities of Portugall*, diuers Nobles and Knights resort to their father *Don Alerezo's* house, to proffer vp their affections to the dignity and merits of his daughters. But his age finding their youth too young to bee acquainted with the secrets and mysteries of marriage, puts them all off, either in generall termes, or honourable excuses, as holding the matching of his daughters of so eminent and important consideration, as he thinkes it fit he should aduisedly consult, and not rashly conclude them: which affection

affection and care of Parents to their children, is still as honourable as commendable.

*Don Sebastiano* their brother, being often both at *Madrid*, *Vallidolyd* and *Lisbone*, becomes very intimately and singularly acquainted with *Don Antonio de Rinere*, a noble and rich young *Cavalier*, by birth likewise a *Portugall*, of the City of *Elias*, who was first and chiefe Gentleman to the *Duke of Bragansa*; and the better to vnite and perpetuate their familiarity, hee proffers him his eldest sister in marriage, and prayes him at his first conueniency to ride ouer to *Auero* to see her, offering himselfe to accompany him in this iourney, and to second him in that enterprize, as well towards his father as sister. *Don Antonio* very kindly and thankfully listenneth to *Don Sebastiano*'s courteous and affectionate proffer, and knowing it so farre from the least disparagement, as it was a great happiness and honour for him to match himselfe in so noble a Family: they affigne a day for that iourney, 'gainst when, *Don Antonio* makes ready his preparatiues and traine in all respects answerable to his ranke and generosity. They arriue at *Auero*, where *Don Gaspar de Vilarezo*, for his owne worth, and his sonnes report, receiues *Don Antonio* honourably, and entertaines him courteously: he visiteth and saluteth, first the mother, then the two young *Ladies* her daughters: & although he cannot dislike *Catalina*, yet so precious and amiable is sweet *Berinthia* in his eye; as he no sooner sees, but loues her: yea her piercing eye, her vermillion cheeke, and delicate stature, aet such wonders in his heart, as he secretly proclaims himselfe her seruant, and publiquely she his *Mistresse*: to which end he takes time

time and opportunity at aduantage, and so reueales her so much in termes, that intimate the seruency of his zeale, and endeere the zeale of his affection and constancy. *Berinthia* entertaines his motion and speeches with many blushes, which now and then cast a rosete vaile o're the milke-white Lillies of her complection; and to speake truth, if *Antonio* bee inamoured of *Berinthia*, no lesse is shee of hym: so as not onely their eyes, but their contemplations and hearts seeme already to sympathize, and burne in the flame of an equall affection. In a word, by stealth he courts her often. And not to detain my Reader in the intricate *Labyrinth* of the whole passages of their loues: *Antonio* for this time findes *Berinthia* in this resolution, that as she hath not the will to grant, so shee hath not the power to deny his suit: the rest, time will produce.

But so powerfully doe the beauty and vertues of sweet *Berinthia* worke in *Antonio* his affections, that impatient of delayes, he findes out her father and mother, and in due termes(requisite for him to giue, and they receiue) demands their daughter *Berinthia* in marriage. *Vilarezo* thanking *Antonio* for this honour, replies, that of his two daughters, he thinkes *Berinthia* his younger as vnworthy of him, as *Catalina* his eldest worthily bestowed on him. *Antonio* answeres, that as he cannot deny but *Catalina* is faire, yet hee must confess that *Berinthia* is more beautifull to his eye, and more pleasing to his thoughts. *Vilarezo* lastly replies, that he will first match *Catalina*, ere *Berinthia*, and that he is as content to giue him the first, as not as yet resoluued to dispose of the second: and so for this

time, they on those termes depart, *Vilarezo* taking *Antonio* and his sonne *Sebastiano* with him to hunt a Stag, whereof his adiacent Forrest hath plenty. But whiles *Antonio* his body pursues the Stag, his thoughts are flying after the beauty of his deare and faire *Berinthia*, who as the Paragon of Beauty and Nature, sits Empresse and Queene-Regent in the Court of his contemplations and affections: hee is wounded at the heart with *Vilarezo* his answere, and *Berinthia* to the gall, when he certified her of her fathers resolution, onely modesty (that sweet companion and precious ornament of Virgins) to the extremity of her power endeavoured to keepe *Antonio* from perceiving or suspecting so much. *Antonio* prayes his deare friend *Sebastiano* to perswade his father to giue him his sister *Berinthia* to wife: he performes the true part of a true friend and a Gentleman; but in vaine: for his father *Vilarezo* is resolute, first, to marry *Catalina*, when *Antonio*, not of power so soone to leaue the sight and presence of his sweet *Berinthia*, must inuent some matter for his stay. And indeed as loue is the whetstone of wit to giue an edge to inuention; so *Antonio*, to inioy the presence of his faire *Berinthia*, is inforced to make shew that hee neglects her, and affecteth *Catalina*: and so conuerseth often with her; but still in generall termes, whereat shee builds many castles of hope and content, in the ayre of her thoughts. For if *Berinthia* loued *Antonio*, no lesse doth *Catalina* strange effects of affection, where two sisters deeply and dearely loue one Gentleman, and when but one, and peraduenture neither of them shall inioy him.

But as *Catalina* is the pretext, so *Berinthia* is both the sole

sole obiect and cause of *Antonio's* stay, whom he courts and layeth close siege to, as often as opportunity makes him happy in the desired happiness and felicity of her company: Shee giues him blushes for his sighes, and sometimes (although a man) the feruency of his affection was such, as hee cannot refraine from returning her teares for her blushes: when albeit loue perswades him to stay longer in *Auero*, yet discretion calls and commands him away to *Lisbone*: and all the fruit of his iourney that he shall carry thither with him is this, that for inioying of faire *Berinthia* to his wife, he conceiuers farre more reason to hope, then to despaire. Next death, there is no second affliction so grieuous or bitter to Louers, as separation and parting: this *Berinthia* feeles, but will not acknowledge, and this *Antonio* acknowledgeth, because feeles. After supper, taking her to a window, hee secretly prayes her to honour him with the acceptance of a poore Scarfe, and plaine paire of gloues (which notwithstanding were infinitely rich, and wonderfully faire) in token of his affection; and she, the morne of his departure, by *Diego* his Page, sends him a handkerchiefe, curiously wrought with hearts and flames of silke and gold, in signe of her thankfulness: hee promiseth *Berinthia* to write, and see her shortly; and *Catalina* intreats him to be no stranger to *Auero*. To *Catalina* he giues many words, but few kisses; to *Berinthia* many kisses, but more teares: His departure makes *Berinthia* sad, as grieuing at his absence; and *Catalina* ioyfull, as hoping of his returne: *Catalina* triumphs for ioy, hoping that *Antonio* shall be her husband; and *Berinthia* now begins to looke pale with sorrow, fearing shee shall

not be so happy to be his wife. By this time breakfast is serued in, when *Sebastiano* comes, takes *Antonio* and his two sisters, and carries them to the Parlour, where *Vilarezo* and his wife *Alphanta* attend *Antonio*'s comming. They all sit downe; and although their fare be curious, yet *Antonio*'s eyes feed and feast vpon more curious dainties; as the sparkling eyes, flaxen haire, and vermillion cheeke of *Berinthia*'s incomparable beauty, which is obserued of all parts, except of *Berinthia*, who is so secret and cautious in her carriage, as although her affection, yet her discretion will not permith her modesty either to obserue or see it. Breakfast ended, *Antonio* taking *Vilarezo* and his wife *Alphanta* apart, first giues them infinite thankes for his honourable and courteous entertainment, and then very earnestly againe prayes them not to reiect his suit for their daughter *Berinthia*. *Vilarezo* and his wife pray *Antonio* to excuse his bad reception, which they know comes many wayes short of his deserts and merits, and also request him to imbrace their motion for their daughter *Catalina*. Thus after many other complements, he takes his conge of *Vilarezo*, kissteth his wife and two daughters, first *Catalina*, then *Berinthia*, who though last in yeeres, yet is the first Lady in his desires and thoughts, and the onely *Queene* of his affections. So they are as it were inforced to make a vertue of necessity, and to take a short farewell, in stead of a more solenne, which either of them wished, and both desired; but their eyes dictate to their hearts, what their tongues cannot expresse: and so *Antonio* and *Sebastiano* take Coach, and away for *Lisbone*, *Antonio* as much triumphing in the beauty of his faire *Berinthia*,

*Berinthia*, as his friend *Sebastiano* greeues, that of his two Sisters, *Antonio* would not accept of *Catalina*, nor his Father consent to give him *Berinthia* for his wife: notwithstanding they confirme their familiaritie and friendship with many interchangeable and reciprocall protestations; that sith they cannot be brothers, they will liue and dye deare and intimate friends: but I feare the contrary.

Being arriued at *Lisbone*, *Antonio* feeles strange alterations in his thoughts and passions. For now he is so intangled in the fettters of *Berinthia's* beautie and vertues, that he will see no other obiect but her *Idea*, nor (almost) speake of any *Lady*, but of her selfe, and in these his amorous contemplations he both reioyceth and triumpheth; but againe remembraunce the assurance of *Vilarezo* his refusall, and the incertainty of *Berinthia's* affection and consent, his hopes are nipt in their blossomes, and his ioyes as soone fade as flourish; he wilheth that *Auero* were *Lisbone*, and either himselfe in *Auero* with *Berinthia*, or she in *Lisbone* with him. To attempt the one, he holds it as great a folly, as a vanitie to wish the other: but he bethinkes himselfe of a remedy for this his perplexity, and reputes himselfe obliged in the bonds as well of respect, as loue, to write to his faire *Berinthia*: and then againe he feares, that it will finde a difficult passage and access to her, because of her Fathers distaste, and Sisters iealousie: but the Sunne of his affection doth soone dispell and dissipate these doubts, or rather disperse them as clouds before the winde: and now to preuent those who might attempt to intercept his letters, he bethinkes himselfe of an inuention, as worthy, as com-

mendable in a Louer: he writes *Berinthia* a letter, and accompanying it with a rich Diamond, sends it her by *Diego* his owne Page to *Auero*, whom purposely & feignedly he causeth to arme himselfe with this pretext and colour, that he is in love with *Ansilua* the Lady *Catalina*'s wayting Gentlewoman, and hath now gotten leaue of his Master to come to *Auero* to seek her in marriage: where after some fiftene daies he arriues, and verie secretly deliuers his Masters ring and letter to *Berinthia*, who (sweet Lady) was then tost with the winde of feare, and the waues of sorrow, that in all this time she heard not from *Antonio*, doubting indeed lest the change of aire, places, and obiects might haue power to change his affection, when now blushing for ioy, as much as before she looked pale for sorrow, she takes the ring and letter, and kissing both secretly flies to her Chamber, when bolting the doore, she with as much affection as impatience breaking vp the seales, therein findes these lines:

**S**weet Berinthia, wert thou as courteous as faire, thou wouldest rest as confident of my affections, as I doe of thy beautie, and then as much reioyce in that, as I triumph in this: but as my tongue lately wanted power, so now doth my pen art, to informe thee, how dearely I lone thy beautie, and honour thy vertues, so as could thy thought prie into mine, or my heart be so happy to dictate to thine, those should know, and this see, that *Antonio* is ambitious of no other earthly felicitié, then either to liue thy husband, or die thy Martyr. Thinke with thy selfe, how farre thou undervaluest, and unrequestest my zeale, when I will despaire of louing *Catalina*, and yet cannot hope that *Berinthia* will  
feel

affect me : only therefore in abee (sweet Lady) it remaines,  
either to crowne my joyrs by thy consent, or to immortalize  
my tormentis by thy refusall : be pleased therfore, faire Be-  
rinthia, to signifie me thy resolution , that I may know my  
doome, and prepare my selfe, either to wed thee or my graue.

## ANTONIO.

Berinthia hauing againe and againe perused and  
o're-read this letter, giues it a thousand kis for his  
sake who wrote and sent it her, and so verie secretly  
locks it vp in her Casket, as also the Diamond, and  
now attends an opportunity to confer priuately with  
Diego, when he will resolute to returne to his Master  
at *Lisbone*, that she may returne him an answer,  
though not so sweet as he expects, yet not so bitter  
as he feares : in the meane time *Diego* deliuereþ her  
Father *Vilarezo* his Masters letter, in fauour of his (pre-  
tended ) sute to *Ansilua*, as also in thankefulnesse of  
his entertainment, without naming either *Catalina*, or  
*Berinthia* his daughters, or once mentioning his re-  
turne to *Auero* : whereat *Vilarezo* greeues, and *Cata-  
lina* bites the lip. But *Berinthia* cannot but smile to see  
*Antonio* his inuention, for the safe deliuery of his let-  
ters, nor yet refraine from laughing in her selfe, to see  
how cunningly his Page *Diego* courts *Ansilua* : for he  
makes such demonstration of loue to her, and she is  
so enamoured of him, that *Catalina* thinkes a short  
time will finish this match , but he and her sister *Be-  
rinthia* know the contrary. *Diego* at the end of three  
daies is desirous to depart, and *Berinthia* extremely  
glad of his resolution to stay no longer : so she takes  
her

her selfe to her Chamber, and writes this letter to her Antonio in answer of his.

*54<sup>th</sup>*  
*3<sup>rd</sup> Fe*  
*1<sup>st</sup> Fe*

**H**ad I not beeene more courteous to thee, then I am faire in my selfe; thou hadst not tasted so much of my affection, nor I so many of my fathers frownes: and although thy tongue and penne haue acquainted me with thy rich zeale intended and devoted to my poore merits, yet judge with thy selfe, whether it be fit for me to requite thee with obseruance; or him that gave me my being, with disobedience. As I desire not to haue thee die my Martyr, so my father will not permit thee to liue my husband: and yet, as it is out of my power to remedy the first, so it is not impossible for time to effect and compasse the last; not that I resolute to giue thee too much hope; rather that I aime to take away some of thy despaire, to the end that I may finde thee as constant in thy affection, as thou me sincere in my constancie. My Sisters zealouise of me, and my Fathers distaste of thee, iauisit thee to manage this fauour of mine, with as much secrecie as circum-spection.

### BERINTHIA.

Hauing folded vp and sealed her letter, she findes out *Diego*, and beckens him to follow her to the garden; where, in one of the bowers she deliuers him this letter, together with a Rose of Opales, the which in token of her loue, she coniures him with safetie and speed to deliuier his Master *Don Antonio*. *Diego* hauing his dispatch of *Berinthia*, soone giues *Ansilua* hers, promising to returne some three weekes after; at which time he praies her to expect him: when thank-

ing

ing Vilarezo for his kinde entertainment, and he bidding him tell his Master he would be glad to see him in Auero, he leapes to horse, and so poasts away for Lisbone.

I cannot relate with what incredible and infinite ioy Antonio receiuies this Letter and Ring from Berinthia: and to write the truth, I thinke the letter scarce contained so many fillables, as he often read it ouer and kissed it: he sees Berinthia's modesty resplend and shine in her affection, and her affection in her modesty towards him, wherein he glories in that, reioyceth in this, and triumphs in both: but although he be sure of her affection, yet he is not of himselfe; for he sees her letter containeth many verball complements, but all of them not one reall promise: and therefore hee cannot repute his tranquillity and felicity compleate, ere he be crowned with this happiness: besides, he feares that his absence and her Fathers presence, may in tract of time by degrees coole the feruency of Berinthia's affection, and yet then, he as soone checkes his owne timidity in conceauing the least suspition of her constancy: now he thinkes to aquaint his intimate friend and her deare brother Sebastiano with their affections, but then he condemnes that opinion, and reuokes it as erroneous and dangerous; and contrary to the rules of loue, in sayling without the compasie of Berinthia's aduice and commands, by the which he holds it both safety and discretion to steere his course and actions, againe, he so infinitely and earnestly longs to re-see his deare and sweet Mistresse, as he resolues to ride ouer againe to Auero; but the obstinacy of Alerezo,

and the iealousie of *Catalina*, make him end that iourney ere he began it. In this perplexity and contestation of reasons, he is irresolute what, or what not to do, but in fine, considering that delaies are dangerous in matters of this nature, he packs vp his baggage, and taking his farewell of *Sebastiano*, vnder pretext of his health, leaues *Lisbone* and the *Duke his Lord* and Master, and retires to his owne home at *Elnas* ( where his father dying some three yeeres before, had left him sole heire to many rich Mannors and Possessions) purposely hereby to be neere to *Auero*, that he might giue order for all things, and let slip no occasion in the processe and prosecution of his affection. The second day after his arriuall to *Elnas*, it being welneere a month since he sent his first, and till then his last letter to *Berinthia*, he now againe dispatcheth his Page *Diego* with his second letter to her, by whom he sends her a chaine of rich pearle, and a paire of gold bracelets richly enammeled. *Diego's* arriuall is pleasing to *Ansilua*, but extremely ioyfull to *Berinthia*: only it nipt *Catalina's* hopes, because she could not understand by him any certaine resolution or assurance of his Masters comming thither. *Diego* hath no sooner saluted his *Ansilua*, but (as his more important busynesse) he seekes meanes to speake with *Berinthia*, which she her selfe proffereth him: he deliuers her his Masters tokens and letter, which she verie ioyfully receiueth, and so trips away to her Chamber; where opening the seales, she therein findes these words:

IT is impossible for my pen to expresse the ioyes my heart received at the reading of thy letter : and as I dispraise not thy obedience to thy Father , so I infinitly both praise and prize thy affection to me : a thousand times I kissed thy lines , and as often blest the hand that wrote them , and al- though they haue given me hope , for despaire ; yet , not to dis- semble , these hopes haue brought me doubt , and that doubt , feare ; nor thou louest me , for that were to disparage my judgement , in seeking to prophane thy affectiō , but that thou wilst not please to accept of my promise , nor to returne me thine : wherein if thou weigh the feruency of my loue , I hope thou wilst not taxe the incredulitie of my feare ; for till I am so happie , not onely to hope , but to assure my selfe that Berinthia will be Antonio's , as Antonio is alreadie Berinthia's , I must needs feare , and therefore cannot truely reioyce . I haue left Lisbone , to reside at Eluas ; therefore faire and deare Lady , I beseech thee destinate me , dispose my seruice , and command both . I long to enjoy the felicity of thy presence : for I take heauen to witnesse , thy ab- sence is my hell upon earth .

## ANTONIO .

Berinthia hauing read this letter , she approues of Antonio's feare , and attributes it to the feruency and sincerity of his affection : she esteemes her selfe infinitly happy in her good fortune , and choyce of so braue a Caualeer for her seruant , whom she hopes a little time will make her husband , to which end she will no longer feed him with delaies , but now re- folues , by his Page Diego at his returne to signifie him so much : and in a word , to send him her heart , as shee hath already receiuied his . But shee

knowes not what the *Interim* of this time will bring soorth.

Passe we from *Berinthia*, to her Sister *Catalina*, whose affection is likewise such to *Antonio*, as by this time she hath perswaded and induced her Father *Vilarezo* to write him a Letter in her behalfe by *Diego*, thereby to draw his resolution, whether he intend to seeke her for his wife or no; or at least to invite him to *Auero*. And although his affection to her Sister *Berinthia* be kept from her, yet she not only suspecteth, but feares it. Glad she is of the opportunity of *Diego* his being there, to conuey his Fathers Letter to his Master: and yet that ioy of hers is soone dissolved into griefe, because all this time he never vouchsafed to write to her her affectiō to him flattreth her still with hope, and yet her judgement in herselfe still suggesteth her despaire, for she hath alwaies the image of this conceit in her imagination, that *Antonio* loues her Sister *Berinthia*, & not her selfe: her suspition makes her subtil, and so she deales with *Ansilua*, to draw the truth hereof from *Diego*, who having learned his lesson, acteth his part well, and I know not, whether with more fidelity or discretion flatly denies it: but loe, here betides an accident, which bewraies the whole mystery and *History* of their affections. On a Sunday morning, when *Berinthia* was descended to the garden to gather flowers, against her going to Church with her Father and Mother, her Sister *Catalina* rusheth into her Chamber, to seeke the *Historie* of *Cervantez*, which the day before shee had lent her, and not finding it either on the Table or the Window, seekes in the pocket  
of

of her gowne, that she wore the day before; and there vnwittingly and vnxpectedly findes the last Letter that *Antonio* had sent her; whereby she perceiued, it was in vaine for her to hope to inioy *Antonio*, sith shee now apparantly saw that hee was her sister *Berinthia's*, and she his. *Catalina* is heereat both sorrowfull, and glad; sorrowfull, that shee should lose *Antonio*, and glad that she had found his Letter. And now to shew her affection to him, and her malice to her sister, shee will try her wits, to see whether she can frustrate *Berinthia*, and so obsaine *Antonio* for her selfe. The passions of men may easily be found out and detected, but the secrets and malice of women difficultly. To which end *Catalina* shewes this Letter to her father, who exceedingly stormes hereat, and with many checkes and frownes curbes *Berinthia* of her liberty, and resolues in his first Letter to *Antonio*, to forbid him his house, and her company, except hee will leauue *Berinthia*, and take *Catalina*: and suspecting that his Page *Diego*'s courting of *Ansilua*, was but onely a policy and colour, thereby to conuey Letters betwixt his daughter *Berinthia* and his Master; hee once thought to give him his Conge, and prohibit him his house, had not *Catalina* prayed the contrary, who would no way displease her waiting Gentlewoman *Ansilua*, because shee was to vse her aide and assistance in a matter of great importance: the vnlocking and dilating whereof is thus:

*Catalina* her affection to *Antonio*, and consequently her malice to her sister *Berinthia* is so violent, that as her father hath bereaued her of a great part of her liberty, so she is so bloody and cruell, as she vowed to

deprive her of her life: a hellish resolution in any woman, but a most vnnaturall and damnable attempt of one sister to another: but wanting faith, which is the foundation and bulwarke; and Religion, which is the preparatiue and *Antidote* of our soules, she runnes so wilfully hoodwink't from God to the diuell, as shée will aduance, and disdaines to retire, till her malicious and iealous thirst be quenched with her sisters blood: to which end she perswades and bribes *Ansilus* with a hundred duckets, to poyson her sister *Berinthia*, & promiseth her so much more, whē she hath effected it: wherunto this wretched & execrable yong waiting *Gentlewoman* consenteth, & in briefe, promiseth to performe it. But God hath otherwise decreed and ordained: To which end shée sends into the City for some strong poyson by an vnowne messenger, which is instantly brought her in a small galley pot. But let vs here both admire and wonder at Gods miraculous discouery and preuention thereof: For that very night, when *Ansilus* had determinately resolued to haue poysoned the *Lady Berinthia*, *Diego* seekes out his Mistresse *Ansilus*, and findes her solitarily alone in one of the cloſe-o'reshadowed bowers of the garden, whom he salutes and entertaines with many amorous discourses, and more kisses; in the middest whereof his nose fell suddenly on bleeding, whereat hee admird, and she grieued; till at last hauing bloodyed all his owne handkerchiefe, *Ansilus* rusheth hastily to her pocket for hers for him, which suddenly drawing forth, her affection to *Diego* hauing made her quite forget her poyson, she with her handkerchiefe drawes out the galley pot, which falling on the floore of the bower

bower (that was paued with square stones) it imme-  
diately burst in pieces; when *Diego's* Spaniell licking  
vp the poyson, instantly sweld and dyed before them.  
Whereat *Diego* grew amazed, but farre more *Ansilua*,  
who blushing with shame, and then growing pale  
for feare, could not inuent either what to say or doe,  
at the strangenesse and suddennesse of this accident.  
*Diego* presseth her to know for whom this poyson was  
prouided, and of whom shee had it. Her answeres are  
variable, and are so farre from agreeing, as they con-  
tradicte each other, which breeds in her the more  
feare, and in him astonishment. Hee coniures her by  
all the bonds of their affection, to discouer it, with ma-  
ny millions of protestations proffesseith it shall dye  
with him; he addes vowes to his requests, oathes to his  
vowes, and kisses to his oathes; so as maids can diffi-  
cultly conceale anything from their Louers: but espe-  
cially fearing that hee might peraduenture suspect  
that this poyson was meant and intended him: shee at  
last vanquished with his importunacy and this consi-  
deration, discouereth (as wee haue formerly under-  
stood) that her *Lady Catalina* had wonne her, there-  
with to poyson her sister *Berinthia*, because she suspec-  
ted she was better beloued of his Master *Don Antonio*  
then her selfe. *Diego* is infinitely astonished at the  
strangenesse of this newes, and like a true and faith-  
full Page to his Master, hauing drawne this worme  
from *Ansilua's* nose, and this newes from her tongue;  
vnder colour to seeke a remedy to stop his blood, gi-  
uing her many kisses, and promising her his speedy  
returne, he leaues her in the garden, and so very spee-  
dily findes out *Berinthia*; to whom (with as much  
truth

truth as curiositie) he from poynt to poynt reueales it, praying her to be carefull not to receive any thing either from *Catalina*, or *Ansilus*, and withall to write for the next morne he will hye to *Elias*, to reueale it to his Master. *Berinthia* trembles at the report of this strange and vncouected newes : so hauing first thanked God for the discouery of this poysone, and her sisters malice, she promiseth him a letter to his Master, and heartily thanks him for his fidelity and affection towards her, the which she voweth to requite ; and for a pledge and earnest therof, drawes off a Diamond from her finger, and giues it him for this good office.

No sooner hath *Aurora* leapt from the watry bed of *Thetis*, and *Phaelus* discouered his golden beames in the azured firmament of Heauen, but *Diego* causeth his horse to be made ready, and tels *Ansilus* that his father hath sent for him to meet him at *la Secco*, and that he will not faile to be backe with her within three dayes, being ready to depart.

Hee, vnder colour of giuing order for his horfe, leaues her, and steales into *Berinthia*'s chamber, whom (poore *Lady*) feare would not permit to take any rest or sleepe that night, the which shée had partly worne out and employed in writing her mind to her deare *Antonio*; and knowing her selfe not safe in *Auero* with her father and sister, shée resoluued to commit her honour and her life into his protection : yea, shée had no sooner finished and sealed her Letter to that effect, but *Diego* comes and knockes softly at her chamber doore. *Berinthia* in her night-gowne and attire is ready for him : shée admits him, commends his care, giues him her Letter to his Master, and praiest him

him to vse all possible diligence in his returne : and so hauing receiuied all her commands, hee secretly de-scends the stayres; and taking leaue of *Vilarezo*, and lastly, kissing his Mistrisse *Ansilua*, he leapes to horfe, rides the first stage, there leaues his Gennet, and takes Poast.

Leaue we *Diego* poasting towards *Eluas*, and come we to *Catalina*, whose malice finding no rest, nor her reuenge remedy, she that very morne, as soone as *Ansilua* came into her chamber, demands whether she be prepared to performe her owne promise, and her hopes? She answereith her *Lady*, that lesse then three dayes shall effect it, and giue a period to all her sister *Berinthia's*. Whereat she is exceedingly glad, but is all this while ignorant what *Diego* hath seene, and *Berinthia* knowes to this effect. *Ansilua* presuming on *Diego* his fidelity, and building on his secrecie; and therefore lesse suspecting his iourney to *Eluas*, remaines still so gracelesse and impious in her bloody resolution, as she now not onely presumes, but assures her selfe that *Berinthia* is neere the ebbe of her dayes, and the setting of her life: and therefore like an execrable Agent of the diuell, she hath now made ready and prouided her selfe of a second paysoned potion, which shée no way doubts but shall send her to her last sleepe. But this female *Monster*, this bloody *shee-Empericke* may be deceiued in her art.

In the interim of which time, *Diego* arriues at *Eluas*, and findes out his Master, to whom he very hastily deliuers *Berinthia's* Letter; the which *Antonio* hauing kissed, breakes off the seales, and there, contrary to his hopes, but not to his desires, reades these lines:

**M**Y sister Catalina's malice is so extreme to me, sith my affection is such to thee, as she degenerates not only from Grace, but Nature, and seekes to bereave me of my life. This bearer, thy Page, who I praye lone for my sake, sith he, under God, hath now preserued me for thine, will more fully and particularly acquaint thee with the manner thereof. So, sith there is no safety for me in my fathers house, into whose armes and protection shall I throw my selfe, but only into thine, of whose true and sincere affection I am so constant and confident, as I rest assured, thou wilt shew thy selfe thy selfe, in preseruing my life with mine honour, and mine honour with my life? It is no paynt of disobedience in me to my father, but of deare respect to mine owne lise; and therefore to thee, far, and by whom I live, this makes me so earnestly desire both thy assistance and sight, sith the first will leade me from despaire, the second to hope and ioy, and both to content; till when feare and loue, with much impatency, make me thinke houres yeeres, and minutes moneths.

### BERINTHIA.

Antonio is amazed at this strange and vnxpected newes, and curiously gathers all the circumstances thereof from his Page, when loue, feare, hope, sorrow, and ioy act their severall parts, as well in his heart as countenance; when prizing Berinthia's life and safety a thousand times before his owne, he with great expedition dispatcheth away Diego the same night to Auero, with this ensuing Letter, which he commands him deliuer his Mistresse Berinthia, with all possible speed and secrecie.

**A**s the Sunne, breaking forth an obscure cloud, shines the clearer, so doth thy true affection to mee, in that damnable malice of thy sister Catalina to thy selfe for my sake, in such sort, as I know not whether I more reioyce at the one, then detest the other. Having therefore first thanked God for thy happy and miraculous preseruation, I next commend my Page, as the second cause of the discouery thereof: and this fidelity of his shall neither be forgotten or unrequited. I binke how tedious time is to me, sith I blame and enue this short Letter of mine, for taking vp and usurping any part thereof, till I enjoy the honour to see thee, and the felicity to assit thee. I returne to thee Poast by Diego, who brought me thine; and my Coach-man tells mee, I shall rather fly then runne towards thee. Let the precise houre, I beseech thee, bo on Munday night at twelve of the clocke, when I will await thy selfe, and expect thy commands at the Posterne of thy fathers Arbour: where, let the light of the candle be my signet, and the report of my Pistoll shall bee thine. I am throwing away my pen, were it not to signific thee, that my sword shall protect thy life, and mine honour preserue thine: as also that Antonio thinkes himselfe the most unfortunate man of the world, till Berinthia bee impaled in his armes, or he insloystered in hers.

ANTONIO.

Whiles Diego is poasting to Auero, Antonio his Master is preparing to follow him, taking (the next morn) his Coach with sixe horses, and three resolute Gentlemen his friends to assit him, with each his Rapiere and case of Pistolls. Diego first arrives at Auero, yea a day and two nights before him. Ansilua checkes him for his long stay; and Berinthia a thousand times thankes

him for his speedy returne. Hee deliuers her his Masters Letter, and prayes her to prepare her selfe against the prefixed houre. She readeſ her Antonio's Letter with much ioy and comfort, which her lookes testifie, and her heart proclaimeth to her thoughts : ſhee will not be slacke or backwards in a matter which ſo deeply imports her well-fare and content ; and ſo with all poſſible ſecrefie packes vp the chiefest of her apparell and iewels in a ſmall trunke, or casket, and wilheth the houre come, that ſhee were either in Antonio's armes, or he in hers : and for Diego, hee caſteth ſo ſubtill a miſt and vaile before Anſilua's eyes, as it is imposſible either for her, or her Lady Catalina to perceiue any thing. But lo, a ſecond trechery is provided, to effect that which the firſt could not : and indeed, which went neere to haue performed it, had not God miraculously and indulgently reached forth his hand to preuent it : for Catalina ſtill perfeuers in her inueterate and deadly malice towards her ſiſter Berinthia, as if God had not yet taught her, or rather, that ſhe would not leарne, the way from Satan ; or Grace inſtructed and directed her from the impiety of ſo foule a ſinne, as the murthering of her owne and onely ſiſter. For the very night that Antonio had promiſed and affiſned to fetch Berinthia, as ſhee had by times retired her ſelfe to her chamber, vnder colour to goe to bed, and ready to put on her night abiliments, in comes Anſilua, ſent by her good and kinde (or rather wicked and cruell) ſiſter, with a ſweet Posſet, (or rather a deadly poyon in her hand, in a ſiluer couered cup) telling her, that her Lady had dranke the one halfe, and ſent her the other, it being (as ſhe affiſmed) very cold and refreshing for the liuer, against

against the hotnesse of the weather. But *Berinthia* being forewarned, is armed by her former danger, yet she seemes ioyfull thereof, and so acceptes it, returning her sister *Catalina* thankes, saying, she will drinke it ere she goe to bed; onely she prayes *Ansilua* first to fetch her prayer booke and gloues, which in the morne shee had left in her sisters chamber. So whiles she wanted, she priuately powres it into a siluer poyson in her study, and washing the cup three or foure feuerall times, she fills some Almond milke therein; and *Ansilua* being returned, takes the said cup, and prayes her to tell her sister, that she drinke it to her health, and withall, gives her the good night: and so likewise doth *Ansilua* to her. But what a good night thought shee in her heart and conscience, when she knew *Berinthia* should neuer see day more? So away shee trips to her *Lady Catalina*, who demands her if the busynesse bee dispatch'd, and her sister gone to her rest? Who replies, she hath dranke her last, and is gone to her eternall rest. But they are both deceiuied in their malicious Arithmaticke: For although *Catalina* extremely reioyce in the confident and assured death of her sister, yet God ordaineth, that their bloody hopes shall deceiu them: as marke the sequell, and you shall see how.

About an houre after *Ansilua's* departure, by *Berinthia's* order and appointment, in wonderfull secret fort in comes *Diego* to her Chamber, to await the houre of his Masters arriuall, and to assist her in her escape and departure. *Berinthia* acquaints him with the potion her Sister *Catalina* had right now sent her by *Ansilua*: he is astonisched at this newes, as being assured it was poyson, and humbly prayes her to make

prooife hereof on *Catalina's Parrot*, which that afternoone she had brought with her into her Chamber: and so by her consent *Diego* takes the Parrot, and with a spoone forceth some downe its throat: who poore harmelesse bird, immediatly swells and dyes before them. They both woonder hereat, and *Berinthia* at one instant both greeues & reioyceth, greeues at her Sister *Catalina's* malice and cruelty, and reioyceth for her happy deliuernance: first praysing *God* as the Author, then thanking *Diego* as the instrument thereof: and so they throw the remainder of the poyson out at the window, and lay the dead Parrot on the table. And now *Berinthia* attending and awayting the houre of her happinesse, which is that of her *Antonio's* arriuall, and of her owne departure, with as much desire as impatency; *Diego* often looking on the houre-glaſſe, and *Berinthia* a thousand times on her watch. So at last with a longing, longing desire, the ioyfull houre of twelue is come, wherein *Antonio* arriuues: he sees the happy light of her candle, and she heares the sweet musique of his Pistoll, which reviueth and rauisheth these two Louers, in the heauen of vnexpressable ioy and content, when all things being hush'd vp in silence, and euery person of the house soundly sleeping, *Diego* softly takes vp the small trunke, and *Berinthia* as secretly followes him: and so they wonderfull priuately slip into the first Court, and from thence to the posterne doore of the garden, where *Antonio* with a thousand kisses receiues her in his armes, hauing no other light but the lustre of her eyes to light them: for the Moone, that Bright *Cynthia*, had conspired and consented to *Berinthia's* escape,

escape, and therefore purposely withdrawne her brightness by hiding, and inuelloping her selfe in the darkenesse of an obscure cloud. *Antonio* locking this sweet prize, this his deare and sweet *Berinthia* in his armes, he with the three Gentlemen his friends, conduct her to the end of the street; and *Diego* followes them with the Casket, where they all priuatly and silently take Coach, and hauing opened the Citie gate with a siluer key, away they speed for *Elias* with all possible celerity; but I write with griefe, that as these affections of *Antonio* and *Berinthia* begin in ioy, so (I feare) they will end in as much sorrow and misery.

Leaue we them now in their journey for *Elias*: and returne we to *Auero* to bloody *Catalina*, and wretched *Ansilas*, who lying remote from *Berinthia's* Chamber, could not possibly heare so much as the least steppe of her descent and departure: although their malice were so extreme as to write the truth, they all that night could not sleepe for ioy, that *Berinthia* dispatched: so they prepare themselues against the morne, to heare some pittifull outcries in the house for *Berinthia's* death; but seeing it neere ten of the clocke, and no rumour nor stirre heard, they both (as they were accustomed) went into her Chamber, thinking to feast their eies vpon the lamentable obiect of this breathlesse Gentlewoman: but contrary to their bloody hopes, they finde the nest, I meane the bed, empty, and *Berinthia* not dead, but escaped and flowne away: Onely *Catalina*, in stead of her Sister, findes her owne Parrot dead on the table: they are astonished at this newes, and looke fearefully and desperately.

sperately each on other. *Ansilua* for her part protests and vowes that she saw *Berinthia* drinke the poysone. But finding *Berinthia's* small trunke wanting, and hearing *Diego* gone, then *Catalina* knowes for certaine, that shée was escaped, and her poysoning plot detected and preuented. So they give the alarum in the house, and she goes directly and acquaints her Father, Mother and Brother of her Sister *Berinthia's* flight, but speakes not a word of the poysone, or the Parrots death. *Vilarezo* greeues to see himselfe robed of his daughter, and *Sebastiano* of his sister: but when they vnderstand that *Diego* was gone with her, then they are confidently assured, that *Antonio* hath carried her away, which is confirmed them by the Porter of the City, who told them, that twixt twelue and one, a Coach with a *Lady* and foure *Cavaleers* anda Page (drawne by sixe horses) past the gate very speedily. *Vilarezo* and his sonne *Sebastiano* storne at this affront and disgrace: they consult what to doe herein: so first they resolute to lende one to *Eluas*, to know yea or no, whether *Berinthia* be therewith *Antonio*? The messenger sent, returnes, and assures them thereof, as also, that *Antonio* is retired from *Eluas*, to a castle of his without the walls of the Citie, where it is reported hee keepes the *Lady Berinthia* with much honour and respect. Had old *Vilarezo* had his health and strength, he would himselfe in person haue vndertaken this iourney, but being sicke of the gowt, he sends his sonne *Sebastiano* to *Eluas*, accompanied with sixe resolute Gentlemen, his neere allies and friends, to draw reason of *Antonio* for this affront and disgrace; and so either by law, force, policy, or per-

perswasion, to bring backe *Berimbia*. *Sebastiano* knowing *Berimbia* to be his Sister; and *Antonio* his former ancient and intimate friend; with a kinde of unwilling willingnesse accepts of this iourney: he comes to *Eluas*, and fiades his former intelligence true, he repaires to *Antonio's* Castle, accompanied with his sixe assosiats. *Antonio* admits them all into the first Court, and onely two more of them into the second; where he salutes them kindly, and bids them all welcome to his Castle. *Sebastiano* layes before him the foulnesse of his fact, in stealing away his Sister in that clandestine and base manner, the scandall which he hath layd vpon her, and consequently on all their familly and bloud, tells him that his Father and himselfe are resoluued to haue her againe at what price soeuer, and therefore coniures him, by the respect of his owne honour, and by the consideration and remembrance of all their former friendship, to deliuere him his Sister *Berimbia*. *Antonio* answereth *Sebastiano*, that it was an honourable affection, and no base respect which led him to assist his Sister *Berimbia* in her flight and escape: that he never was nor would be a iust scandall either to her, her family, or bloud; that his malicious Sister *Catalina* was the author and cause thereof, who by her wayting *Gentlewoman Ansilua* had twice sought to poyson her: and therefore, sith hee could not deliuere her with her owne safetie, and his honour and conscience, he was resoluued to protect her in his Castle, against any whosoeuer, that should seeke either to enforce or offend her.

*Sebastiano* is perplexed at this strange newes, and wondereth at *Antonio's* resolution: so doe the two

Gentlemen with him : he desires *Antonio* that he may see and speake with his Sister *Berinthia*; the which he freely and honorably grants: and so taking him by the hand, they enter the Hall: where *Berinthia* hauing notice hereof (accompanied with two of *Antonio* his Sisters) as soone comes, and with a cheerefull countenance aduanceth towards her brother : he salutes her, and she first him, then the other two Gentle-men her cousins. *Sebastiano* prayes *Antonio*, that hee may conferre apart with her Sister. *Antonio* replies, that his Sister *Berinthia*'s pleasure shall euer be his. She willingly consents herunto, when he taking her by the hand, conducts her to the farthest window, and there shewes her, her disobedience to her Father, her dishonour to her selfe, and griefe to her friends, for this hervnadvised and rash flight, and so perswades her to returne : and that if she intend to marry *Antonio*, this is not the way, but rather a course as irregular as shamefull. His Sister *Berinthia* delivers him at full the cause of her departure ; and very constantly confirmes what *Antonio* had formerly told him of her Sister *Catalina*'s two feuerall attempts, to poysone her by her wayting Gentlewoman *Ansilus*, though with more ample circumstance and dilation : and to testifie the truth, *Diego* is produced, who vowes and protestes the same. *Sebastiano* checks her of folly and cruelty, shewes her, that in seeking to wrong others, she only wrongs her selfe ; that in inuenting and casting a feigned crime on her Sister *Catalina*, shee makes her owne conspicuous and true, that she hath no safety but in her returne : whereunto with many reasons he seekes to perfwade and induce her.

His

His Sister *Berinthia* againe answereth him, that there is no safety for her in *Auero*, and that she cannot expect greater then she findes in *Eluas*: she praies him to thinke charitably and honourably of her departure: and if euer her Father will loue her, she requests him not to hate, but to loue *Antonio*, whose Castle she findes a *Sanctuary*, both for her honour and life; taking God and his Angels, her conscience and soule to witnesse, that her Sister *Catalina's* crime is true and not feigned. *Sebastiano* seeing *Antonio* resolute, and his Sister willfull and obstinate, begins to take leaue, telling her, that he will leave her to her folly, that to her shame, and her shame to her repentence, and so concludes to goe into the City, to resolute on what hee hath to doe, for her good and his owne honour. *Antonio* prayes him to dine in his Castle with his Sister: but he refuseth it, saith he hath giuen the first breach to their friendship, and his own honour, which hee shall repent, if not répaire, and so departs. Being come into the Citie, he consults this businesse with the *Gentlemen* his associats, and both himselfe and they are of opinion to send one poast to acquaint his father herewith, and so to craue his pleasure and resolution, how hee shall beare himselfe herein. It is euer an excellent point both of wisdome and discretion, for a sonne to steere his actions by the compasse of his Fathers commands. His cousin *Villandras* vndertakes this iourney to *Auero*. Old *Vilarezo* is perplexed and greeued at this report, and in stead of comfort, receives more affliction, his care, curiositie, passion and grieve: severally examineth first *Catalina*, then *Ansilua*, who (like theeuers in a Faire, or

murtherers in a Forest) he findeſ equally conſtant in their deniall, being ſo dewoide of grace, and replete of impiety, as they confirme and maintaine their innoſcencies with many bitter oathes and affeuerations: ſo he returnes *Villandras* to *Eluas*, with this Letter to his ſonne *Sebastiano*.

**I** Commend thy wiſdome, as much as I diſpraye Antonio's resolution, and greeue at thy Sister Berinthia's folly and diſobedience: I haue carefully and curiouſly examined the two parties, whom I finde as innocent as conſtant in the true deniall of their falſly obiected crimes: I haue conſulted with Nature and Honour, how herein I might be directed by them, and conſequently, thou by me; ſo they ſuggeſt me thiſ aduice, and I aduife thee thiſ resolution, either by the law of the kingdom, or by that of thy ſword, with expedition to returne mee my Daughtre thy Sister Berinthia, and let not ſhe Oratory either of Antonio's tongue, or her teares perſuade thee to the contrary: for then as ſhe is guilty of our diſhonours, ſo wee ſhall be accenſary to hers: let me understand the proceeding herein, and according as occaſion ſhall preſent, if my ſickneſſe and weakeſſe will not leauē me, I notwithstanding will leauē Auero, to ſee Eluas.

VILAREZO.

Whiles *Sebastiano* is conſulting how to free his ſister Berinthia, from the power of Antonio, ſpeak we a little of *Catalina*, who (as ſkilfull in subtilitie as malice) ſeeing her treachery & bloudy intents reuealed, thinks it now high time to make away & poyſon *Anſilas*; grounding her reſolution on thiſ maxime, both of policy and estate,

estate, That dead folkes doe neither harme nor tell tales. Behold heere the iustice and prouidence of God ! she, who laid snares for others, must now be taken in them her selfe : a punishment which the sinne of this wretched Gentlewoman findes, because deserueth : there is no vice nor malice, but haue their pretexts and colours. Catalina findes fault with two or three red pimples that *Ansilua* hath in her face, which she will haue taken away. She sends for an Empericke, one *Pedro Sarmista*, and proffereth him one hundred duckers to poyson her, which like a limbe of the diuell, he undertakes ; and infusing poyson in some potions, he administreth it her : she the very next day dyes : a fit reward & punishment for so gracelesse and bloody a Gentlewoman, who (as we haue formerly seene) made no religion nor conscience, to attempt two feuerall times to poyson the faire and vertuous *Berinthia*.

Whiles this Tragedy is acting at *Auero, Sebastiano* begins to act another in *Eluas*, but a thousand times lessie impious, and more honourable: For haing receiuied his fathers order, by *Villandras*, hee now sends him into the Castle, to take *Antonio's*, and *Berinthia's* last resolution, he is admitted to them : *Villandras* directs his speech first to *Berinthia*, then to *Antonio*, to whom hee relateth his message, and *Sebastiano's* pleasure. *Berinthia* returns him this answere: Cousin *Villandras*, recommend me courteously to my brother *Sebastiano*, and tell him, my first answere and resolution is, and shall be my last. And (quoth *Antonio*) I pray likewise informe him from me, that *Berinthia's* will is my law, and her resolution mine, and that I will bee as carefull, as willing and ready, to lose my life in defence

and preseruation of hers. *Villandras* returnes, and acquaints *Sebastiano* with this their last resolutions; from which, he alleageth it is impossible for them to bee dissuaded or diuerted. *Sebastiano* is beaten with two contrary and irresolute windes, what to doe in a businesse of this nature, either to recouer his sister by law or by armes: by law, he holds it a course both cowardly and prejudiciale: by armes, he sees he must kill himselfe or his friend: to vndertake the first, would be the laughter of *Antonio*; and not to attempt the second, the shame of all *Portugall* and *Spaine*: hee therefore prefers generosity before reason, and passion aboue iudgement, and so resolues to fight with *Antonio*: to which end he makes choyce of his cousin *Villandras* for his second, and the next morne sends him to the Castle with this challenge:

**I** Must either returne my sister Berinthia to Auero, or lose my life here at Eluas; for I had rather dye, then live to see her dishonour, sith hers is mine: neither doe I first infringe or violate the bonds of our familiarity, rather thy selfe, sith thou art both the authour and cause thereof: wherefore of two things resolute on one: Either before to morrow morning sixe of the clocke render me my sister Berinthia, or else at that houre meeete me on foot, with thy second, in the square greene Medow vnder thine owne Castle, where the choyce of two single Rapiers shall await or attend thee. If thou art honourable, thou wils grant my first; if generous, nor deny my second request.

**SEBASTIANO.**

*Antonio*

*Antonio* receiuess this challenge, beares it priuately from all the world, especially from his sweet *Berinibia*, who (poore Lady) little imagines or suspectes, her brother and louer are rushing soorth for her sake : He retumes this answere by *Villandras*, that he cannot grant *Sebastiano* his first request, nor will not deny him his second. So he chuseth a cousin-germane of his, a valiant young *Gentleman*, tearmed *Don Balasco*, who willingly and freely ingageth himselfe in this quarrell. So hee and *Villandras* that night (with as much friendship as secrestie) meet in the City, and resolute on the Rapiers, and other ceremonies requisite in *Duels*. The morne appeares, when our Combatants leape from their beds to the field ; where, a little before sixe (being the appoynted houre) all parties appeare : the Seconds per forme their office in visiting the Principals, who cast off their doublets and draw, and so trauersing their ground, they, with iudgement and generosity, fall to their businesse ; at the first cloze, *Antonio* is wounded in the right arme, and *Sebastiano* in the left side, which glanced on a rib : at the second, *Sebastiano* wounds *Antonio* twixt the brest and shoulder, a little aboue his right pap ; and he him cleane thorow the body, of a large & dangerous wound, whence issued forth abundance of blood : so they diuide themselues and take breath : They againe fall to it, and at this third cloze *Sebastiano* repaires *Antonio* with a mournfull and fatall interest: for he runnes him thorow the body on the left side, a little below the heart ; whereof staggering, he falles, and so *Sebastiano* dispatcheth him, and nailes him to the ground starke dead. *Villandras* congratulates with him for his victory, which *Sebastiano* with much

much modesty, ascribes to the power and prouidence of God, and not to the weakenesse of his owne arme. *Ballasco* is no way daunted with the misfortune and death of his Principall, but rather like a generous Gentleman and valiant Second, resolues to sell it dearly to *Villandras*. They are not long vnsheathing of their Rapiers : for as soone as *Ballasco* hath couered vp *Antonio* with his cloke, they approch at their very first meeting. *Ballasco* slightly hurts *Villandras* in the right shoulder, and *Villandras* him thorow the body and reines, with a fatall wound, wherewith his sword fell from him, and he to the ground ; when fearing and presaging his death, he with a faint language begs his life of *Villandras*, who at the fight and hearing hereof, throwes away his owne Rapier, and stoopes to assist him. But in vaine ; for it is not in his power to giue him his life : for by this time he is dead, and his soule departed to another world. This tragical newes is soone knowne and bruted in *Elvas*, whereof the criminall Judges of that City remit *Sebastiano* with as much easie, as *Villandras* with difficulty (in fauour of money and friends) and obtaine their pardons. And now the newes hereof likewise flies to *Antonio*'s Castle, where his dead body, and that of *Ballasco*, are speedily conveyed and brought, to the grieve and sorrow of all those of the Castle, who bitterly weepe for the disaster of their Lord and Master. But all these teares are nothing to those of *Antonio*'s two sisters ; nor theirs any thing, in comparison of these of our sweet *Berithia* : who is no sooner aduertised hereof, but shee falls to the ground with sorrow, and there wrings her hands, beats her brest, and teares off her haire, in such mournefull

full and pitifull sort, that Cruelty her selfe could not refraine from teares, to see the numberlesse infinity of hers : counsell, aduice, perswasion cannot perswade her to give a moderation to her mourning, or limits to her sorrowes : for they are so violent, as their extremity exceeds all excesse. She will see the dead body of her deare *Antonio*; all those of the Castle are not capable to diuert her eyes from this wofull and pitifull object ; at the sight whereof she falles to the ground on her knees, and gives his breathlesse body a thousand kisses : yea she washeth his sweet cheeke with a whole deluge and inundation of her salt teares : shee cannot speake for sighing, nor vtter a word for weeping ; one-ly wringing her hands, she at last breathed forth these mournfull and passionate speeches : O my deare *Antonio*, my sweet and deare *Antonio*, *Antonio*, would God my death had ransomed and prevented thine, O my *Antonio*, my *Antonio*.

Leue we *Berimbis* to her passionate sorrowes, and sorrowfull passions, from which her brother *Sebastiano* will soone awake her ; who by this time, as Victor and Conqueror, is come to the Castle gate and demands her, where he sees himselfe refused, & the draw-bridges and approches drawne vp, and rampired vp with Barricadoes : he craues aide of the criminall *Judges*, who send the *Prouost* with an armed company of souldiers : so they force the Castle gate with a *Petard* ; where sorrowfull *Berimbis* is deliuered into the hands of her ioyfull and reioycing brother *Sebastiano*, who with sweet perswasions and aduice seekes to exhale and dry vp her teares : but her affection is so great, as shee is not capable of consolation. In a word, shee cannot

ooke on her brother with the eye of affection, but of reuenge and indignation : yea, shée wisheth her selfe metamorphosed from a Virgin to a man, that shée might be revenged of her brother for the death of her deare Louer *Antonio*. *Sebastiano* leauing the dead bodies of *Antonio* and *Balasco* to their graues, takes Coach with his incensed and sorrowfull sister *Berinthia*; and so leaues *Eliusas*, and returnes towards *Auero*, where his father *Vilarezo*, and his mother *Alphanta* welcome him home with praise, and their daughter *Berinthia* with checkes and frownes, who (the best she may) smothers her discontents ; but yet vowed to be reuenged of her brother, for killing the life of her ioy, and the ioy of her life, *Antonio*. But all vowed of this bloody nature and quality are better broken then kept ; which if *Berinthia* had had the grace to haue considered, and made good vse of: doubtlesse her end had proued more ioyfull, and not so fatall and miserieable.

Come we now to *Catalina*, who seeing the obiect of her affection, *Antonio*, dead, and her sister *Berinthia* returned, who for his sake was that of her liuing malice : she secretly confesseth her fault to her sister, in seeking formerly twice to haue poysoned her by *Ansilua*, craues pardon of her, vowing henceforth to convert her malice to affection, and so reconciles her selfe to her : whereunto her sister *Berinthia* willingly descendeth. *Catalina* hath made her peace with her sister, but shée hath not contracted and concluded it with God for *Ansilua*'s death. Earth may forget this murther, but Heauen will not : Gods iudgements are as iust as secret, and as true as wonderfull; for he hath a thousand

thousand meanes to punish vs, when wee thinke our selues safe and furthest from punishment : which our wretched *Catalina*, and her execrable *Empericke Salmiata* shall see verified in themselues : For the smoke of this their bloody crime of murther, hath pierced the vaults and windowes of heauen, and is ascended to the nostrels of the Lord, who hath now bent his bow, and made ready his arrowes to reuenge and punish them. The manner is thus :

A Sister of *Ansilua's*, named *Isabella*, is to be married in *Anero*, who inviteth the *Ladies Catalina* and *Berinthia* to her wedding. *Berinthia* is too sorrowfull to be so merrie, as desirous rather to goe to her owne graue, then to any others nuptials : so she staies at home, onely her Sister *Catalina* takes Coach, with an intent to accompany the bride-woman to Church : but see the prouidence & iustice of God, how it surprizeth & ouertakes this wretched Gentlewoman *Catalina* ! for as shee was in her way, the Sunne is instantly eclipsed, and the skies ouer-cast, and so a terrible and fearefull thunder-bolt pierceth her thorow the brest, and layes her neere dead in her Coach : her Wayting-maids and Coach-man hauing no hurt, are yet amazed at this strange and dismall accident, so they thinke it fit to returne : *Catalina* is for a time speechlesse, her Parents are as it were dead with griefe and sorrow hereat, shee is committed to her bed and searched, and all her body aboue her waste is found coale-black: the best *Physicians* & *Chirurgians* are sent for : they see her death-strooken with that Plannet, and therefore adiudge their skill but vaine : her strength and fences fall from her, which *Catalina* ha-

uing the happynesse to perceiue, and grace to feele, will no longer bee seduced with the diuels temptations. The *Divines* prepare her soule for heauen, and now she will no longer dissemble with man or God; shee will not charge her conscience with so foule a crime as murther, the which shee knowes will proue a stop to the fruition of her felicity. She confesseth, she twice procured her Wayting-Gentlewoman *Ansilua* to poysen her Sister *Berinthia*; and since that, she hath giuen *Sarmiata* one hundred Duckets to poysen the said *Ansilua*, which he performed, and whereof she humbly begs pardon of all the world, and religiouly of God; whom shee beseecheth to be mercifull to her soule. And so though she liued prophanely and impiously, yet she died repentantly and religiouly. *Vilarezo* and *Alphanta* her old Parents greeue and storne at her death; but more extremely at the manner thereof, and especially at the confession of her bloody crimes, as well towards liuing *Berinthia*, as dead *Ansilua*; onely their daughter *Berinthia* is silent hereat: glad, that she is freed of an enemy; sorrowfull to haue lost a Sister: they are infinitly vexed to publish their daughter *Catalina's* crimes, yet they areinforced to it, that thereby this *Sarmiata*, this Agent of Hell, may receiue condigne punishment for his bloody offence on earth. So they acquaint the criminall Judges hereof, who decree order and power for his apprehension. *Sarmiata* is reuelling and feasting at *Isabella's* wedding: to which he is appointed and requested to furnish the sweet meats for the banquets, but hee little thinkes what sowre sawce there is prouiding for him. We are neuer neerest danger, then when,

when we thinke our selues furthest from it : and al-  
though his sinnefull securtie was such, as the diuell  
had made him forget his murther of *Ansilua*, yet God  
will, and doth remember it ; and lo, here comes his  
storne , here his apprehension, and presently his pu-  
nishment. By this time the newes of *Catalina's* sud-  
daine death (but not of her secret confession) is pub-  
lished in *Auero*, and arriued at the Bride-house, which  
giues both astonishment and griefe to all the world :  
but especially to *Sarmiata*, whose heart and con-  
science now rings him many thundering peales of feare,  
terroure and despaire : his bloudy thoughts pursue  
him like so many bloud-hounds, and because he hath  
forsaken God, therefore the diuell will not forsake him ;  
he counselleth him to flie, and to prouide for his safe-  
tie : but what safety so vnsecure , dangerous, or mis-  
erable for a Christian, as to throw himselfe into the  
diuels protection ? *Sarmiata* hereon fearing that *Ca-*  
*talina* had revealed his poysoning of *Ansilua*, very  
secretly steales away his cloake, and so slippes downe  
to a Posterne doore of the little Court, hoping to es-  
cape ; but hee is deceipted of his hopes, for the eie of  
Gods prouidence findes him out. The house is be-  
leagred for him by the Officers, who apprehend him  
as he is issuing foorth , and so commit him close  
prisoner. In the after-noone the Judges examine him  
vpon the poysoning of *Ansilua*, and the receipt of one  
hundred Duckets to effect it, from *Catalina* : which  
she at her death confessed. He addes sin to sinne, and  
denies it with many impious oathes and fearefull  
imprecations : but they auiale him nothing : his  
Judges censure him to the Rack, where, ypon the first

torment he confesseth it, but with so gracielesse an impudencie, as he rather reioyceith then greeues hereat: where we may obserue how strongly the diuell sticks to him, and how closely he is bewitched to the diuell: so for reparation of this soule crime of his, hee is condemned to be hanged, which the next morne is performed, right against *Vilarezo* his house, at a Gallowes purposely erected; and which is worse then all the rest, as this lewd villaine *Sarmiata* ha' d prophanelly, so he died as desperately, without repenting his bloudy fact; or imploring pardon or mercy of God for the same. O miserable example! O fearefull end! O bloudy and damnable miscreant! We haue scene the Theatre of this *History*, gored with great variety of bloud, the mournfull and lamentable spectacle whereof, is capeable to make any *Christian* heart relent into pitty, compassion and teares: but this is not all, we shal yet see more, not that it any way increaseth our terrour, but rather our consolation, sith thereby we may obserue, that murther comes from Satan, and its punishment from God.

*Catalina's* confession and death, is not capeable to deface or wash away *Berinthia's* malice and revenge to her brother *Sebastiano*, for killing of her deare and sweet Loue *Antonio*. Other Tragedies are past, but this as yet not acted, but to come: Loe now at last (though indeed too too soone) it comes on the stage: the remembrance of *Antonio* and his affection is still fresh in her youthfull thoughts and contemplations, yea his dead *Idea* is alwaies present & lining in her heart and brest: 'tis true, *Sebastiano* is her brother: 'tis as true she saith, that if he had not kill'd *Antonio*,

*Antonio*

*Antonio* had beeene her husband. Againe shee considereth , that as *Antonio's* life preferued hers from death : so her life hath beeene the cause of his : and as he lost his life for her sake, why should not she likewise leauue hers for his ? or rather, why should she permit him to liue ; who hath bereaued her of him ? But her liuing affection to her dead friend is so violent, and withall so preiudice and reuengefull, as she neither can nor will see her Brother who kill'd him, but with malice and indignation. In stead of consulting with *Nature* and *Grace*, shee onely conuersteth with choller and passion: yea she is so miserably transported in her rage, and so outrageously wilfull in her resolution, as she shuts the doore of her heart, to the two former vertues to whom shee should open it , and openeth it to the two latter vices, gainst whom she should shut it. A misery equally ominous and fatall, where Reason is not the mistris of our Passions, and Religion the Queene of our Reason. She sees, this bloudy attempt of hers, wherinto shee is entering, is stornefull and impious , and yet her faith is so weake towards *God* , and the diuell so strong with her, as she is constant to aduance, and resolute not to retire therein. Oh that *Berinthia's* former Vertues should be disgraced with so foule a Vice ! And oh that a face so sweetly faire, should be accompanied and linked with a heart so cruelly barbarous, so bloudily inhumane ! for what canshe hope from this attempt in killing her brother, but likewise to ruine her selfe ? Nay, had she had any sparke of wit or grace left her, shee should consider , that for this soule offence, her body shall receiuue punishment in this world, and her soule, without

out repentance, in that to come : but shee cannot erect her eies to heauen, shée is all set on reuenge ; so the diuell hath plotted the murther of her brother *Sebastiano*, and shee, like a most wretched and inhumane sister, will speedily act it : The maner is thus, (the which I cannot remember without griefe, nor pen without teares : ) shee prouides her selfe of a long and sharpe knife, the which, some ten daies after the death of her Sister *Catalina*, twixt four and fife of the clocke in the morning, shee hides in one of her sleeves; and the better to couer, and ouer-vaile her villanie, shee in the same hand takes her Lute, and so enters her brothers Chamber, and findes him sleeping, being a pretty way distant from hers, and his Page *Philippe* in a lower Chamber vnder him : resoluing that if shee had found him waking, shee would play on her Lute, and affirme, shee came to give him the good morrow. But *Sebastiano* his fortune, or rather his misfortune was such, that hee was then soundly sleeping, without dreaming, or once thinking what should befall him : when his wretched and execrable Sister *Berimbisia* stalkes close to him ; and laying her Lute softly on the window, drawes out her diuellish knife foorth her sleeve, and as a she-diuell incarnate, cuts his throat, to the end hee might neither crie nor speake ; and so, though with a femall hand, yet with a masculine courage, shée (with as much malice as haste) giues him seuen severall wounds thorow the body, and as neere the heart as shée could ; whereof hee twice turning himselfe in his bed, neuer sprawled more : and then taking vp her Lute, and leauing him reeking in his bloud, shée after this her

her hellish fact, hies her selfe to her Chamber.

This cruell murther is not so closely perpetrated and acted, but *Philippo Sebastiano's* Page, heares some extraordinary stirring and struggling in his Masters Chamber, and so leapes out of his bed; and taking his cloake on his shoulders, and his Rapier in his hand, he ascends the staires, where *Berinthia* hath not made so great speed; but hee sees her entring her Chamber, and throwing her doore after her. Whence running to his Masters Chamber, he findes the doore open, and his Master most cruelly murthered in his bed, of eight feuerall wounds; at which bloody and lamentable spectacle, he makes many bitter and pittifull out-cries: whereat all the house is in allarum, and the folkes and seruants repaire thither of all sides. By this time *Berinthia* hath shifted her out-ward taffeta gowne sprinkled all with bloud, and wrapt her bloody knife close in it; and for the more secreste throwes it into her close-stoole: and so awaits the comming vp of her Father and Mother, whom the mournefull echo and sorrowfull newes of their son *Sebastiano's* cruell murther, had with an Ocean of teares wasted to his Chamber, with whom *Berinthia* likewise all blubbered with teares enters. Theyare all amazed at the sight of this bloody and breathlesse corps, and wringing their hands, father, mother, daughter, and seruants, looke one on another in this calamity, and at this sorrowfull disaster. They search euery Chamber, Vault and doore of the House, and find no body, nor print of drops of bloud whatsoever: when *Philippo* the Page cries out, that hee feares, it is the *Lady Berinthia*, who hath murthered her brother

ther and his master *Sebastiano*, for that hee saw her flying to her Chamber as he ascended the staires. *Vila-rezo* and *Alphanta* his wife are doubly amazed at this report, but gracelesse *Berinthia* is no way daunted or astonished hereat, but affirmes, shee likewise heard some stirring in her brothers Chamber, which made her arise and come to the Staire head, where seeing *Philippo*, she being in her night attire, modesty made her retire to her Chamber. They all beleue the suger of her words, and the circumstance of her excuse; yet they will not proclaime her innocency, till they haue searched her Chamber, and all her trunkes, where they finde no knife, stilleto, dagger, or any other offensiuе weapon, and so her father and mother acquite her, but God will not: Notwithstanding they must aduertise the criminall *Judges* of this lamentable and bloudy murther of their sonne, which they do. So they arriuе, visit the dead body, and cause all the house to be searched: but as soone as they heard *Philippo's* speeches and suspition of *Berinthia*; then, considering her affection to *Antonio*, and her brother *Sebastiano's* killing of him at *Elwas*, they attribute this to be her fact, as proceeding from passionate reuenge; when the sequell and circumstances thereof being apparent in themselues, they not regarding her fathers prayers, her mothers requests, and her owne teares, seize on her, and so send and committ her close prisoner: where wretched *Gentlewoman*, shee hath a whole night left and giuen her, to see and consider the foulenesse of her fact, and to prepare her to her answer: which whether it will breed in her confession or deniali, obstinacy or repentance, as yet I know

know not. So from her imprisonment, come we to her answere.

*Auero* rings with the newes of this soule and bloody murther; all bewaile, all lament the death of *Sebastiano*, as a Gentleman who was truly noble, truly generous: but his father *Vilarezo*, and mother *Alphanta*, seeme to drowne themselues in their teares, at these mourmfull accidents, strange croffes, and vnheard of afflictions of theirs. For though they wil not beleue, yet they deepeley feare, that their daughter *Berinibia* was the murtherer of her brother *Sebastiano*. And as affection seemes to diuert them from this opinion: so reason endeuoureth to perswade and confirme them in the contrary. The next morne the Judges sit and send for *Berinibia*, who comes accompanied with her parents, and many of her kinsfolkes: they againe examine her, and confront her with *Philippo*: shee is firme in her denyall: and her Judges finde circumstances, but no probability nor witnesse against her, sufficient to conuict her of this crime: yet directed by the finger of God, they condemne her to the Racke. One of her Judges pitying her descent, youth and beauty, as much as he detests this murther, intreats that her chamber may be first curiously searched, ere shee exposed to the Racke. This aduice and request is heard and followed with approbation: He, and two other Officers, accompanied with some of her friends, repaire to *Vilarezo* his house, and *Berinibia* her chamber: They leauen no place, trunke, cheſt, nor boxe vnsearched: yea their curiositie, or to ſay truer, their zeale and fidelity to iuſtice, deſcends ſo low, as to viſiſt her cloſeſtoole, which for want of the key, they breake open; and be-

hold the prouidence and iustice of God: heere they finde Berinthia's bloody gowne, and therin very close-ly wrapt vp that hellish knife, wherewith she perpetra-ted this inhumane murther on her onely brother. They praise and glorifie God for the discouery hereof, and so returne to their tribunall of iustice, bringing these bloody evidences with them, which Berinbia mought all this while haue remoued, if God, to his glory, and her shame, had not all this time purposely blinded the eyes of her iudgement to the contrary. At the sight hereof, she, without any torment, confesseth the murther, and with many teares repents her selfe of it: adding withall, that her affection to *Antonio* led her to this reuenge on her brother; and therefore beseecheth her Judges to haue compassion of her youth. But the soulenesse of her fact, in those graue and iust personages, wipe off the fairenesse of her re-quest. So they consult and pronounce sentence against her, that for expiation of this her cruell murther on the person of her brother; she the next morne shall be hanged in the publike market place. So all praise God for the detection of this lamentable murther, and for the condemnation of this execrable murtheresse: and those, who before looked on her youth and beauty with pity, now behold her foule crime with hatred and detestation: and as they applaud the sincerity of her former affection to *Antonio*: so they farre more detest and condemne this her inhumane cruelty to her owne brother *Sebastiano*. But what griefe is there compara-ble, to that of her father and mother, whose age, con-tent, and patience, is not onely battered, but razed downe with the seuerall assaults of affliction, so as they

with

wish themselfes buryed, or that their children had been vnborne? for it is rather a torment then a griefe to them, that they whom they hoped would haue bin props and comforts to their age, shoulde now prooue instruments and subiects to shorten their dayes, and consequently to draw their age to the miseries of an vntimely and sorrowfull graue. But although they haue tasted a world of griefe and anxiety; first for the death of their daughter *Catalina*, and then of their onely sonne *Sebastiano*: yet it pierceth them to the heart and gall, that this their last daughter and child *Berinthia*, should passe by the passage of a halter, and end her dayes vpon so ignominious and shamefull a stage as a gallowes: which would adde a blemish to the lustre of their blood and posterity, that time could never haue power either to wipe off, or wash away: which to prevent, *Vilarezo* and his wife *Alphanta* vse all their friends and mortal powers, towards the *Judges*, to conuert their daughters sentence into a leſſe shamefull and more honourable death. So although the gal- lowes bee erected, *Berinthia* prepared to dye, and a world of people; yea, in a manner, the whole people of *Auero* concord and seated to see her now take her last farewell of the world: yet the importunacy and misery of her parents; her owne descent, youth and beauty, as also her endeered affection and fervent loue to her Louer *Antonio*, at last obtaine compassion and fauour of her *Judges*: so they reuoke and change their former decree, and sweeten the rigour thereof with one more honourable and milde, and leſſe sharpe, bitter, and shamefull, and definitiuely adjudge her to be immured vp betwixt two walls, and there, with a flen-

der diet to end the remainder of her dayes. And this sentence is speedily put in execution; whereat her parents, friends and acquaintance, yea, all that knew her, very bitterly grieue and lament; and farre the more, in respect they cannot be permitted to see or visit her, or she them: onely the Physicians and Diuines haue admittance and acceso to her; those, to prouide earthly physick for her body, and these, spirituall for her soule: and in this lamentable estate she is very penitent and repentant for all her sinnes in generall, and for this her vile murther of her brother in particular: yea, a little imprisonment, or rather the Spirit of God hath opened the eyes of her faith, who now defying the diuell, which had seduced and drawne her heere unto, she makes her peace with God, and assures her selfe, that her true repētance hath made hers with him. So, vnaccustomed to be pent vp in so strait and darke a mew, the yellow Iaundize, and a burning Feauer surprize her: and so she ends her miserable dayes.

Lo, these are the bitter fruits of revenge and murther, which the vndertakers (by the iust judgement of God) are inforced to taste and swallow downe; when in the heate of their youth, and height of their impie-ty, they least dreame or thinke thereof: by the sight of which great effusion of blood, yea by all these variety of mournfull and fatall accidents, if wee will diuorce our thoughts from Hell to Earth, and wed our contemplations and affections from Earth to Heaven, wee shall then, as true Christians and sonnes of the eternall God, run the race of our mortality in peace in this world, and consequently be rewarded with a glorious Crowne of immortall felicity in that to come.

THE



THE  
TRIVMPHS OF  
GODS REVENGE AGAINST  
the crying and execrable sinne  
of Murther.

## History VIII.

Belluile trecherously murthereth Poligny in the street ; Laurieta , Poligny's Mistresse , betrayeth Belluile to her chamber , and there , in reuenge , shoots him thorow the body with a Pistoll , when assysted by her Waiting-maid Lucilla , they likewise giue him many wounds with a Poniard , and so murther him : Lucilla flying for this fact , is drowned in a Lake , and Laurieta is taken , hanged and burnt for the same .

T is an infallible Maxime , that if we open our hearts to sinne , we shut them to godlinesse ; for as soone as we follow Satan , God flies from vs , because wee first fled from him : but that his mercy may shine in our ingratitude , hee by his seruants , his holy Spirit , and himselfe , seekes all meanes to reclaine vs , as well from the vanity of our thoughts , as from the pro-

prophanesse and impurity of our actions: but if we become obstinate and obdurate in our transgressions, & so like Heathens, fall frō vice to vice; wheras we should as Christians, grow vp from vertue to vertue: then it is not he, but our selues that make shipwracke both of our selues and soules; of our selues in this life, of our soules in that to come; then which no misery can bee so great, none so vnfortunate and miserable. It is true, the best of Gods children are subiect to sinne; but to delight and perseuere therein, is the true way as well to hell as death: all haue not the gift of pure and chaste thoughts, neither can we so conserue or sanctifie our bodies, but that concupiscentie may, and will sometimes assayle vs (or rather the diuell in it) but to pollute them with fornication, and to transforme them from the temples of the holy Ghost, to the members of a harlot: this, though corrupt *Nature* seeme to allow or tolerate; yet *Grace* doth not onely defend, but detest: but as one sinne is seldome without another, either at her heeles or elbow: so too too often it falles out, that murther accompanyeth fornication and adultery: as if one of these foule crimes were not enough to make vs miserable, but that in stead of going, wee will needs ride post to hell. A wofull president, and lamentable and mournful example, whereof I here produce to the view of the world, in three vnfortunate personages, in a lasciuious Lady, and two lewd and debosht young *Gentlewomen*, who all very lamentably cast themselues away vpon the *Sylla* of fornication, and the *Charybdis* of murther: for they found the fruits and end of their beastly pleasures far more bitter, then their beginning was sweet: yea and because at first they

they would not looke on repentance, at last shame lookes on them, and they, when it is too late, both on a miserable shame, and a shamefull misery. May wee all reade it to Gods glory, and consequently to the reformation of our liues, and the consolation and saluation of our owne soules.

In the beautifull City of *Auignion*, (seated in the Kingdome of *France*, and in the prouince of *Prouence*) being the *Capitall* of the *Duchy* of *Venissa*, belonging to the *Pope*, & wherin for the tearme of welneere eighty yeeres, they held their Pontificall See; there dwelt a young *Gentlewoman* of some twenty yeeres of age, tearmed *Madamoyſelle Laurietta*, whose father and mother being dead, was left alone to her ſelfe, their onely child and heire, being richer in beauty then lands, and indued with many excellent qualities and perfections, which gaue grace and lustre to her beauty, as her beauty did to them: For ſhe ſpake the *Latine* and *Italian* tongue perfect, was very expert and excellent in ſinging, dancing, musicke, painting, and the like, which made her famous in that City. But as there needs but one vice to eclipse and drowne many vertues: ſo this faire *Laurietta* was more beautifull then chaste, and not halfe ſo modeſt as laſciuous. It is as great a happineſſe for children to inioy their parents, as a misery to want them: For *Laurietta's* father and mother had been infinitely carefull and curious to traine her vp in the ſchoole of *Vertue* and *Piety*, and wherein her youth had (during the tearme of their liues) made a happy entrance, and as I may ſay, a fortunate and glorious progreſſion: but when *God*, the great Moderator, and ſoueraigne Judge of the world,

had in his eternall Decree and sacred Prouidence taken them out of this world. Then *Laurietta* was left to the wide world, and to the vanity thereof, without guide or gouernour, exposed to the variety of the fortunes, or rather the misfortunes of the times, as a Ship without Pilot or Helme, subiect to the mercy of euerie mercilesse windē and wāue of the Sea: yea, and then it was that shee forgot her former modesty and chastity, and now began to adore the shrines of *Venus* and *Cupid*, by polluting and prostituting her body to the beastly pleasures of lust and fornication, wherein (it grieues me to relate) shee tooke a great delight and felicity. But she shall pay deare for this bitter-sweet vice of hers: yea and though it seeme to begin in content and pleasure, yet wee shall assuredly see it end in shame, repentance and misery: for this sinne of whoredome betrayes, when it seemes to delight vs, and strangleth, when it makes greatest shew to imbrace vs: so sweet and pure vertues, are modesty and chastity; so foule and fatall vices, are concupisence and lust. But he with whom she was most familiar, and to whom she imparted the greatest part of her fauours, was to one *Monsieur de Belluile*, a proper young Gentleman, dwelling neere the City of *Arles*; by birth and extraction, noble, but otherwise more rich then wise: who comming to *Auignion*, no sooner saw *Laurietta*, but hee both gloryed in the sight of her singular, and triumphed in the contemplation of her exquisite and incomparable beauty: making that his best content; and this, his sweetest felicity; that, his soueraigne good; and this, his heauen vpon earth: so as losing himself in the Labyrinth of her beauty, and as it were drow-

ning

ning his thoughts in the sea of his concupiscentie and sensuality, hee spends not onely his whole time, but a great part of his wealth, in wantonizing and entertaining her: a vicious and foule fault, not onely peculiar to *Bellmire*, but incident and fatall to too many Gallants, as well of most parts of *Christendome* in generall, as of *France* in particular; it being indeed a disasterous and dangerous rocke, wheron many inconsiderate and wretched *Gentlemen* haue suffered shipwracke, not onely of their reputations, healths and estates, but many times of their liues.

In the meane time, *Laurietta* (more icalous of her fame, then carefull to preserue her chastity) is aduertized that *Bellmire* is not content to cull the dainties of her beauty and youth: but he forgets himselfe and his discretion so farre, as to vaunt thereof, by letting fall some speeches, tending to the blemish and disparagement of her honour: so as vaine and lasciuious as shee is, yet the touching of this string affords her harsh and distastfull melody: For she will seeke to couer her shame by her hypocrisie, and so resolues to make him know the foulenesse of his offence, in that of his basenesse and ingratitude. To which end, at her first interview and meeting of him, shee not onely checkes him for it, but forbids and banisheth him her company: which indeed had been a iust cause and opportunity for him to haue conuerted his lust into chastity, and his folly into repentance. But hee is too dissolute and vicious, to be so happily reclaimed from *Laurietta*; and therefore he is resolued, not onely to iustifie his innocency; but thereby also to perseuere in his sinne: hee is acquainted with many *Gentlemen*, who forgetting them-

themselves, conceiue a felicity and glory, to erect the trophies of their vanities vpon the disparagement of Ladies honours : yea he seemes to be so farre from being guilty of this error, as hee taxeth and condemnes others, in being guilty or accessary thereunto. So, although his Mistris *Laurieta* remaine still coy, strange and haggard to him : yet he perseuereth in his affection to her, who at last iudging of his innocency, by his constancy; and of that, by his many letters and presents which he still sent her, as also obseruing that shee had no firme grounds, nor could produce any pregnant or valable witnesses of this report; she againe exchangeth her frownes into smiles, and so receives and entertaines him into her fauour, onely with this premonition and caution, that if euer hereafter she heard of his folly or ingratitude in this kinde, she would never looke him in the face, except with contempt and detestation. So these their disioynted affections, as well by oathes as protestations, are againe confirmed and cemented : but such lustfull contracts, and lasciuious familiarities and sympathies, seldome or neuer make prosperous ends.

Now to giue forme and life to this *History*. Not long after, a braue young Gentleman of *Mompillier*, named *Monsieur de Poligny*, hauing some occasion, comes to *Auignion*, who frequenting their publike Balles or dancings, no sooner saw our faire and beautifull *Laurieta*, but he falls in loue with her, and salutes and courts her : and from thenceforth deemes her so faire, as he vseth all meanes to become her seruant, but not in the way of honour and mariage, rather with

with a purpose to make her his *Courtisan* then his wife. But he sees himselfe deceived in the irregular passion of his affection: for *Laurietta* is auerse, & will not be either tractable or flexible to his desires: so as his suite is vaine, and shee so deafe to his requests, as neither his prayers, sighs, letters nor presents are capeable to purchase her fauour. *Poligny* infinitely greeues hereat, which notwithstanding makes the flame of his lust rather increase then diminish: so as after much pensiuenesse, he begins to beat his wits, & to awaken his inuention, how he may crowne his desires by enjoying *Laurietta*, when lo, an occasion presenteth it selfe to him vnexpected.

*Madamoysele la Palaisiere*, a rich young Gentlewoman neere *Pont Saint Esprit*, liuing in *Auignon*, and seeing *Poligny* at the dancing, doth exceedingly fall in loue with him, yea she so admires the sweetnesse of his fauour, and the excellency of his personage, as she reioyceth in nothing so much; and to write the truth, in nothing else but in his company: so as, had not modesty with-held her, she would haue proued her owne aduocate, and haue informed him thereof her selfe. *Poligny* receiuies so many secret signes and testimonies of her affection, by priuate glances and the like, as he cannot be ignorant thereof: but his loue, or rather his lust to *Laurietta*, hath so absolutely taken vp his heart and thoughts, as it hath left no place nor corner for *la Palaisiere*: so as here we may obserue and remarke a different commixture and disparity of affections. *Poligny* loues *Laurietta*, and not she him: *la Palaisiere* affects *Poligny*, & not he her: what these passions & occurrences will produce, we shall shortly see.

*La Palaisiere*, hauing her heart pierced thorow with the loue of *Polygony*, knowing him to be *Laurietas* seruant, and she the Mistris of *Belluile*, either out of her affection, or icalousie, or both, resolues at next meeeting to acquaint *Polygony* with it, thereby purposely to withdraw his affection from her to herselte: the occasion is proffered, and opportunity seemes to fauour and second her desires. Some three daies after, the *lesuites* (who as the Mountebanks and Panders of Kingdomes and Estates, leaue no inuention, nor ceremony vnattempted, to seduce and bewitch the affections of the world) cause their Schollers to act a Comedy in their Colledge in this Citie, whereat all the Nobility and Gentry of the Citie and adiacent Countrie assemble and meet. Thither comes *Polygony*, hoping to see *Laurietas*, and *La Palaisiere* to see *Polygony*: but *Laurietas* that day is sick, and *Belluile* stayes with her to comfort her. So first comes *Polygony*, and seeing hee could not see his *Laurietas*, sits downe pensiuely: then comes *La Palaisiere*, and seeing *Polygony* a farre off, prayes her brother, who conducted her, to place her neare him. *Polygony* can doe no lesse then salute her, and she triumphing in her good fortune, takes the aduantage of this occasion, and in sweet and sugered tearmes (after many pawses, sighs and blushes) giues him to vnderstand that she knew his affection to *Laurietas*, and withall, that *Belluile* and no other was her seruant and fauorit. This speech of hers strikes *Polygony* to the quick: so as therat hee not onely bites the lippe, but hangs his head; yea, this vnxpected newes, as also *Belluile* and *Laurietas* absence, so nettle him, and frame such a

*Chymera*

Chymera of extravagante passions in his heart and thoughts, as he could not haue the patience to sit out the Comedy, but feigning himselfe sicke, departs to his Chamber: where a thousand ialousies ingendered of his affection, perplexe and torment him; when remembraunce *La Palaisieres* speeches, and being infinitly desirous to know the truth of *Belluile* his affection to *Laurieta*, and of hers to him, he sees no meanes nor person so fit to reueale the same, as *Lucilla*, *Laurieta's* Wayting-maid. This *Lucilla*, *Poligny* wins with gold; in consideration whereof, she reueales him all, how *Belluile* was her chiefe Minister and Fauourite: and yet, for some words hee the other day in ignorance or wine, let fall to the preiudice of her honour, she was like to casheere and discard him. *Lucilla* haung thus forgotton her owne fidelity, in bewraying the dishonour of her Mistris *Poligny*, vnderstanding *Belluile* to be a coward of his hands, though not of his tongue; and in a word, not to be so compleate a gallant as he supposed him, he of a subtil and malicious inuention resolues to worke on him; and so conceiuers a plot, which we shall see presently put in execution and acted: he very politikely puts a good face on all his discontents and passions: and although *Laurieta* would not see him, yet hee fairely intrudes himselfe into *Belluile's* company, and of purpose becomes familiar with him. So they very often meet: for they fence, dance, ride, vault and hunt together: so as at last none are so great consorts & Cammarades as they. But *Poligny* thinking every houre a yeere, before he had played his prize, makes a party at Tennis with *Belluile* for a collation, and beates him; and so taking

two Gentlemen, *La Fontaine*, and *Borelles* his friends with them, away they goe all soure to a Tauerne. *Poligny* as secret as malicious in this his plot, in the middest of their mirth speakes thus to *Belluile*, Sir, quoth he, I am sorry for your losse of this Collatio: but if it please you to honour me with your company to morrow to *Ornge*, a City which I much desire to see, I will pay you the dinner in requitall thereof. *Belluile* very readily and willingly consents hereunto, and *La Fontaine* and *Borelles* vow they will likewise haue their share, both of the iourney & dinner. So the next morne they all take horse for *Ornge*, but first *Belluile* giues his Mistris *Laurieta* the good morow, and acquaints her with his iourney: they view this old City, the ancient patrimony and principality of the *Illustrious Princes of Ornge*, from whence they derive their name: where *Poligny* hauing giuen order for the dinner, away they goe, visite the Castle, and salute the deputed *Gouvernour* thereof *Monsieur Vosbergh*: they see the part of the *Ampitheatre* yet standing, the Cathedrall *Church*, the double wall of the Citie, and the old *Roman Arch* not farre off, with all other remarkable obiects and monuments; and by this time the Cooke and their stomacks taxe them of their long stay. So they returne to their Inne, fall to their Viands, and like frolike Gentlemen, wash them downe with store of *Claret*: and now *Poligny*, as malicious in heart, as pleasant in countenance and conuersation, here, casteth foorth his lure and snare to surprize and intangle *Belluile*. O quoth he, how happy the Gentlemen of Italy are to vs of France, sith after dinner euery one goes freely to his *Courtisan* without controulment!

troulment. I know not, quoth *la Fontaine*, what *Ornge* is, but I thinke *Auignion* is not destitute of good fellow wenches, who make *Venus* their Queene, and *Cupid* their god. Surely no , replies *Belluile*, for I am confident that for *iewes* and *Curtisans*, for the greatnesse of it, it may compare with the best Citie of *Italy* : for from the Lady to the Kitchin-maid I dare say theyle all proue tractable. Nay , quoth *Borelles*, except still our holy Sisters the *Nunnes*. Not I faith, quoth he, nor my Mistris neither. Indeed, replies *Pologny*, if I knew you had a Mistris of that complection, I would aduenture a glasse of Claret to her health. When *Belluile* (out of a phantastick French humour) affirmed he had a Mistris , whose beauty was so excellent , as hee knew he could not receiue shame to name her, and if you please to honour her selfe and me with her health , I proclame that *Madamoyfelle Laurietta* is my *Mistris*, and my selfe her seruant.

Of wise and Christian *Gentlemen*, what prophanē speeches and debosched table-talke are these they vse here, as if their glory consisted in their shame, or their best Vertues were to be discouered in the worst of Vices? for howsoeuer the Viands they did eat, may preserue the health of their bodies, yet this dissolute communication of theirs must needs poyson and destroy that of their soules: for as they should praise God in the receipt of the one: so contrariwise they incense and displease his sacred *Majesty* in giuing him the other: yea, this is so farre from Christianity and heauen, as it is the high and true way to Athiesme and hell: for whores and healths, in stead of prayer and thankesgiuing, are the prodigious and certaine fore-

runners of a feared conscience, and the dangerous and execrable symptomes of a leprous soule.

Birds are taken by their feir, and men by their tongues : *Belluile* hauing so basely and fottishly abusid himselfe in the disparaging of his Mistris *Laurietia*, *Poligny* hath his errand, for which he purposely came to *Orenge*. So dinner ended, they very pleasantly returne for *Auignion*: that night *Poligny* cannot sleepe for ioy, or rather for reuenge. For now hee presumes to know how to worke himselfe into *Laurietia's* fauour by vnhorsing *Belluile*: it is a dishonest and a base part to betray our friend, and vnder the cloake of friendship and familiarity, to harbour and retaine malice against them: but this irregular and violent passion of loue in young and vnstayed iudgements, many times beares downe all other respects and considerations. For if Religion and conscience be contemned, what hope is there that either honesty be regarded, or friendship obserued, sith it is the onely cement and sinewes thereof? But *Poligny* is as resolute as malicious in his purpose; and therefore the next morne by his Lackey, sends the Lady *Laurietia* this Letter :

*I*T is out of sincere affection to thee, and not out of pre-meditated malice to *Belluile*, that I presume to signifie thee, how lately in my presence at *Orenge* his tongue let fall some words that tended to the prejudice and disparagement of thine honour : whereof I know it is not onely the part, but the due of a true Gentleman, to be rather curios in preserving, then any way ingratefull in revealing thereof. Neither doe I attempt to send thee this messe, sherty-

so insinuate, or drawe thee to affect me the more, or him the lesse : onely shew it is contrary to my complection and nature, to permit any Lady to be wronged in my presence ; how much lesse thy selfe, to whom I not onely owe my seruice, but my life. If thou wili not approue my zeale, yet thou hast all the reason of the world to pardon my presumption : and to make my Letter reall, what my pen affirmes to Laurietta, my sword is ready to confirme to Belluile.

## POLIGNY.

In the extremity and excesse of those three dif-  
ferent passions ; griefe, choller and astonishment,  
Laurietta receiuies and reads this Letter, and like a dis-  
solute Gentlewoman, being more carefull of her repu-  
tation to the world, then of her soule towards God,  
she knowes not whether she haue more cause and  
reason either to approue Poligny's affection, or to con-  
demne Belluiles folly : it greeues her to the heart to  
haue bestowed her fauours on so base and ingrateful a  
Gentleman as Belluile ; vowes she will make him re-  
pent it, and is resolute that this vanity and folly of his  
shall cost him deare : yea, she is so impatient in these  
her fumes of griefe and reuenge, that shee thought  
once with all expedition to haue sent for Belluile,  
to make him as well see the fruits of his owne ingrati-  
tude, as to taste the effects of her reuenge and indig-  
nation, but she holds it requisite and fit, and her selfe  
in a manner bound first to think Poligny for his cour-  
tesie, by returning him a Letter in answer of his, which  
she speedily dispatcheth him by his owne Lackey to  
this effect :

I know not whether thou hast shewed me a truer testimony of thy discretion and affection, than Belluile of his enuy and folly. But as I rest infinitely obliged to thee for thy care of my reputation; so I resolve shortly to make him know what he deserves in attempting to eclipse and disparage it. Now as I grieue not, sa. I must confess I cannot refraine from sorrowing at this his undeserved slander: for as mine innocency defends me from the first, so my sexe cannot exempt me from the second: and looke what disparity there is betwixt thy generosity, and his basenesse; so much there is betwixt the whitenesse of my chastity, and the foulenesse of his aspersion. I rest so confident of the truth of thy pen, as I desire no confirmation by thy sword; and I flatter not, rather assure my selfe, that thy Belluile was so indiscreet to wrong me, he will neither have the wit or courage to right him selfe. I returne thee many hearty thankes for this kind office and courtesie of thine: the which though I cannot re-quite, yet I will not onely indeuour, but striue to deserue.

## LAURIETA.

Whiles Poligny receiuies Laurieta's Letter with much content, and many kisses, as triumphing to see how he hath baffled Belluile by working him out, and consequently himselfe into her fauour: wee will for a while leaue him, to consider whether the end of his treachery to Belluile will prove as fortunate and pleasing to him, as the beginning promiseth. And in the meane time we will a little speake of Laurieta, to see what course and resolution shee meanes to hold and obserue with Belluile. It is not enough that shee hath written Poligny a letter, but her enuy and contempt towards

towards *Belluile* is so implacable, as she with much hast and secrecie sends for him: her requests to him are commands; yea, he needs no other spurres but those of his lust, and of her beauty, to make him rather fly, then poast to her presence, when not so much as once dreaming of his former foolish speeches deliuering against his Mistresse *Lauriets*, much lesse of *Polygony's* treason conspired and acted against him, hee thinkes to kisse her, whom so often hee hath formerly kissed: but his hopes, and her disdaine decejue him: for shee peremptorily slightes him; when hauing fire in her looks, and thunder in her speeches, shee chargeth him with this scandall deliuering by him at *Orenge*, in presence of *Polygony*, against her honour and chastity. And is this (quoth she) the reward a *Lady* shall deserue and receive, by imparting her fauours to a *Gentleman*? and is this the part of a *Gentleman*, to erect the trophies of his glory vpon his Mistresse disgrace? or are these the fruits of thy sighs and teares, or the effects of thy requests, oathes and letters? Yea, such was then her furious rage, and diuellish reuenge, as shee was prouided of a *Stilletto*, to haue there stab'd him to the harr, in her chamber, had not her Waiting-maid *Lucilla*, with her best oratory and perswasion powerfully diuerted her to the contrary, by alleaging her the imminency of the danger, which the foulenesse and hainousnesse of that fact brought her into. *Belluile* is amazed at this newes, when now prouing as prophane to *God*, as before he was base and ingratefull to *Laurieta*, he, with many oathes and imprecations denies these speeches, and this slander; and with much passion protesteth of his innocency. But this will not satisfie *Laurieta*:

ricia: for to make his shame the more notorious in his guiltiness, shee produceth him *Poligny's Letter*; whereat *Belluile* hangs his head, and seemes to let fall the plumes, not onely of his pride, but of his courage and iustification; yet he bitterly and vehemently perseuereth in his deniall: but all this is not capable to appease or content *Lauriera*; and which is worst of all, nothing can possibly doe it, except hee make good her honour, and his owne innocency, by a combate or *Duell*, against *Poligny*. So *Belluile* sees himselfe driuen to a narrow and a shrewd push: He hath wronged *Lauriera*, and knowes not how to right her: *Poligny* hath wronged him, and there is no way left for him to right himselfe, but by challenging and fighting with *Poligny*. But he loues *Lauriera* dearely, and therefore must resolute to fight, or lose her: as for his owne part, to giue him his true character and description, hee is rather a City swaggerer, then a field fouldier, loues rather to haue a faire sword, then a good one, and to weare it onely for shew, not for vse: he is ambitious of nothing more, then to be reputed, rather then found valiant. In a word, for a Tauerne quatrell, or a Stewes brawle he is excellent; but to meet his enemy in the field with a naked sword, that doth not onely daunt but terrifie him. The greatest comfort and consolation he findes in this his perplexity, is, that hee knowes hee hath many fellows and companions, who are as white-lauer'd, and as very cowards as himselfe: of which numbers hee flattereth himselfe with this poore base hope, that it is not impossible for *Poligny* to be one. But what is this to give satisfaction to *Lauriera*, except it may shew himselfe to be *Belluile*, but not a Gentleman?

leman? But all these considerations notwithstanding, he loues *Laurietta* so tenderly and dearely, as not daring see her till he had met *Poligny*; he pluckes vp his spirits, and infusing more metall and courage into his resolutions then accustomed, resolues to fight with him: to which end, hauing at length fitted himselfe of an excellent Rapier, whose temper (with as much truth as laughter) I confess, was farre better then that of his heart: he, by his Lackey some three dayes after, sends *Poligny* this challenge:

*T*hy malice and treachery to me, is as odious as remarkable: for whiles I sought to cherish thy friendship, it hath purposely been thy delight and ambition to betray mine, in throwing the apple of discord betwixt the Lady thou wotest of, and my selfe, upon the poyns of her honour; for whose defence and preseruation, I owe not onely my seruice, but my life: which errour, or rather crime, of thine, though thy affection to her may seeme to allow, yet my reputation to the world cannot, and my Rapier will not; therfore sith I haue been the undeserved obiect of thy malice, finde it not strange that I iustly repute and hold thee the cause of my enuie; which can receiu no other satisfaction or reconcilment, but that to morrow at fve in the morne, thou meet me without Seconds, on the bridge by the iron stumpe, (the limits twixt the King and the Pope) with thy single Rapier, where I will attend thee with another; of which two take thou the choyce, and give me the refusall. Sleep not too much this night, for in the morne I doubt not but to send thee to thine eternall rest.



BELLVILE.

*Poligny*

*Poligny* receiuers this challenge, and admires to see *Belluile's* resolution, from which all former reports could neuer draw assurance; it is not feare that casts his head into these doubts, or these doubts into his head; for he is too generous to be a dastard, and too *Eagle-bred* to turne crauen: for reioycing in hauing made *Belluile* swallow a Gudgin, and triumphing in presuming himselfe seated in the throne of *Laurier's* fauor, makes him as resolute to receiuue this challenge, as willing and ready to perfome it; onely the remembrance that *Belluile* sent it him by a Lackey, and not by a Gentleman, throwes him into as much disdaine as choller; but he resembling himselfe, passeth ouer this respect without respect, and so bids the Lackey tell his Master, that he will not faile to meet him, at the place and houre appoynted.

The night doth, or should bring counsell: *Belluile* wisheth his challenge vnsent; but it being out of his hands, it is out of his power to reuoke or recall it. *Poligny* is of a contrary temper, and glad in his acceptance thereof, desires that his sword were in action, as well as his courage in contemplation. So out-passing the night, which *Belluile* passeth ouer with as much feare, as *Poligny* with generosity, the Courtaines of the night being withdrawne, and the day appearing, ere five haue stricken, *Belluile* notwithstanding is first on the bridge, and *Poligny* immediately after him: they are without Seconds, and therefore they briefly vnbrace, but not vncase their doublets. *Belluile* will bee valorous in words; and so according to his challenge, and the right of *Duels*, offereth *Poligny* the fight and choyce of his Rapier. *Poligny* is too braue to dye in his

his debt, vpon the poynt of honour and magnanimitie, and therefore giues him his, as contented with the refusall: so (courtesie for a while conteunding with valour) they both assume and accept of their owne Rapiers, when diuiding themselues, they ioyne with resolution and fury. At first comming vp, *Poligny* giues *Belluile* the first wound in his right shoulder, without receiuing any, whereat hee is more affrighted then *Poligny* reioyced; at the second, hee receives another wound in the left side, but is not yet so happy to see or assure himselfe, that his Rapier hath once touched *Poligny*'s body, or which is lesse, his clothes: whereupon considering *Poligny*'s generosity, and comparing the bad grounds of his quarrrell, with the faintnesse and basenesse of his courage, he throwes off his sword, prayes *Poligny* to desist, for he holds himselfe satisfied: when *Poligny* disdaining to taint his honour with the least shadow of dishonour, in receiuing *Belluiles* shame, giues him the happinesse and fruition of his life, and so they part. Lo here the first fruits of their foolish and lasciuious affectiōns to *Laurieto*: but I feare, the second will proue more bitter and bloody. *Belluile* going homewith his shame and repentance, and *Poligny* with his honour and glory, they hush themselues vp in silence, *Poligny* at his chamber, and *Belluile* at his Chirurgions house to dresse his wounds, hoping that as they in their fight saw no body, so, that none had seene them. But they are deceiued; for two souldiers from the Castle walls not onely espy them fighting, but know them. So they divulge it in the City, whereof *Laurieto* being aduertised, shee sends a confident Gentleman, a Cousin germane of hers, to finde out *Belluile*,

uile, and to know the truth and issue of his combate; but indeed his cowardize hath purchased him so much shame, as he will not be scene, much lesse spoken withall, which *Laurietta* vnderstanding, begins conceiue that the two souldiers report was true, and that vn-doubtedly he and *Polygony* had met and fought in her behalfe: whereupon ghesing at the truth, that *Polygony* had giuen *Belluile* the foyle; she was once of opinion to haue written *Polygony* to be informed of the particulars and successe of their combate, which so much imported as well her honour as her content. But *Polygony*'s affection preuenteth her curiositie: for as shee was calling for pen and paper, hee in person ascendeth the staires to her chamber, where, after a complementall and courteous salute, he informes her (as we haue formerly vnderstood) that hee hath giuen *Belluile* two wounds for her sake, and now his life for his own. She demands if he himselfe were not hurt? He answeres, No. At both which good newes shee infinitely reioyceth, and in token of her thankfulnessse, permits him to gather many kisses, as well from the roses of her cheeke, as the cherries of her lips: and so from thenceforth he vowed to be her professed seruante, and shee promiseth him to be, though not his Mistresse, yet at least his friend. And here they unite and combine their affections: but that contract, and this familiarity, written onely in vice, and sealed in lust, we shall shortly see cancelled and annihilated, with as much pitty, as infamy and misery, as the sequell of this History will shew and demonstrate.

Whiles thus *Laurietta* and *Polygony* are triumphing in *Belluile's* foyle, and their own familiarity and affection,

how

how is it possible but he must infinitely grieue for his losse of *Lanrieta*, and la *Palaisiere* as much sorrow to see her selfe deprived and out of hope of her *Poligny*? But they brooke their afflictions and passions with variable resolutions : for whiles la *Palaisiere* is imbathing her selfe in her teares and discontents, *Belluile* is resolute to quench his reuenge in *Poligny's* blood. For forgetting as well his God, as his soule, his honour as himselfe, he intends to doe it by the bye, and not by the maine ; by execrable treachery, not by magnanimous generofity : yea the diuell is so strong with his faith, because that is so weake with his Sauiour and Redeemer; as shutting the doores of his humanity and charity, he opens them to choller, reuenge, and murther : yea and henceforth he is so enraged, and his looks are so ghastly and distracted, as if his thoughts were conducting and encouraging his hands to perpetrate some bloody stratageme and designe ; which is obserued and doubted by his chiefest familiars and intimate friends, as also by la *Palaisiere*, whose company he sometimes frequents, not so much out of affection to her, as for consolation from her to himselfe ; sith we are subiect both to hope and beleue, that our afflictions are partly eased and diminished by the sight and relation of that of others, as sympathizing and participating with them, first, in their flames of loue; then, of grieve and sorrow, in being disdained of those we loue. Neither could *Belluile* so cunningly or closely rake vp the fiery sparkes of his malice and reuenge, vnder the embers of secrecie and silence : but her affection to *Poligny*, and ialousie of his good, made her so tender-car'd, and sharpe-sighted, as she ouer-heard

some words that either in ~~left~~ or ~~earnest~~ fell from Belluile's tongue, whereby it was apparent to her, that he intended no good, but portended a secret fatall malice to him, which a little time might too too soone and vnexpectedly discouer : whereupon her loue to Poligny was so deare and honourable, although hee were so firmlye intangled in the beauty of Laurieta, as hee would not vouchsafe, rather disdained to loue her selfe : that she thought the discouery of Belluile's malice to Poligny, so much imported Poligny's good, as she held her selfe bound as well in duty as affection, to reueale and relate it him ; which she doth in this Letter :

**T**O testifie thee now the constancy of my affection with ynke, as I have formerly done the feruency whereof with teares, know, thou hast some cause to feare, and to doubt, that Belluile hath some dangerous project, or bloody designe to put in execution, against his honour and thy life : & as I reueale it thee out of my care, so looke thou preuent it out of thine owne discretion : lest be bereave thee of thy life, as thou hast done him of his Laurieta, if thou slight this my aduise, as thou hast already my affection : yet as I remaine witnessse of the purity of the last, so will these lines beare testimony to the world, of the candour and sincerenity of the first : Neither doe I presume to send them thee out of any irregular ambition, to purchase the honour of thy fauour, but onely so let thee know, that my affection is both powerfull and capeable to shane thorow the clouds of thy distaine, and that the obscurity of that neither hath defaced the lustre, nor can eclipse the resplendency of this : Regard therefore thine owne safety, albeit thou wils not respect

respect my content, and although thou please not, giue me  
the honour to be thy Mistris, yet I will take the ambition  
and resolution, so line and dye thine hand-maid.

## LA PALAISIERE.

Poligny breaking vp the seales of this letter, laughs to  
see la Palaisiere's affection, and to vnderstand Belluile's  
malice : and being besotted with Laurietta, he lost both  
his wit and iudgement in the sight and contempla-  
tion of her beauty : yea, he is growne so fond in his  
affection, and respect towards her, as he is arriu'd to  
the meridian of this simplicity, to deeeme it a kinde of  
treason, to conceale any secret from her : to which  
end hee shewes her la Palaisiere's Letter, which hee  
makes his pastime, and she her May-game : yea, so  
vaine is her folly, and so foolish her vanitie, to see the  
passages and euents of these their passions, as she not  
only exceeds the *Decorum* of discretiō, but of modesty  
in her laughter : and which is more, when she againe  
considereth how Belluile loues her selfe, and not she  
him, la Palaisiere Poligny, and not he her, it makes  
her redouble her mirth and exhilaration in such sort,  
as she seemes to burst with the violence and excessiſe  
thereof: but this mirth of hers shall be shortly way-  
ted and attended on with misery and mourning. But  
Poligny notwithstanding, sees himselfe doubly obli-  
ged to la Palaisiere, as well for her affection to him, as  
her care of him : and so holds himselfe obliged in  
either of these respects and considerations, to requite  
her with a Letter : the which now vnknowne to Lau-  
rietta, he writes, and sends her to this effect:

Q. 3

11.

**I**T is not the least of my ioyes, that Belluile cannot bear me so much malice as thou doest affection. Tis true, I haue not deserved thy loue : 'tis more true, I haue not merited his hatred: for that proceeds from heauen, as a diuine influence, this from hell, as an infernall frenzie. I will not feed thee with hope, neither can he give me despaire: for (not to dissemble) it is as likely I may loue thee, as impossible I shall feare him : he may haue the will to doe me hurt, I wifhit were in my power to doe thee good; neither can he be more malicious to performe mee that, then I will be ambitious to confirme thee this: his malice I entertaine with much contempt, thy kinde aduise and sincere affection with infinite thankes : for when I consider thy Letter, I cannot rightly expresse or define, whether he beginne to hate mee, or I to loue thee more : I doubt not but to make his deeds proue words to mee, and I beseech thee feare not, but my words shall proue deeds to thee : for I am as confident shortly to salutre faire la Palaifiere, as carelesse when I meet foolish Belluile.

### POLYNY.

Hauing thus dispeased her his Letter, the vanity of his thoughts, and the beastliness of his concupiscence, and sensuality, not onely surprizeth his reason, but captiuates his judgement, so as Laurietts sight defacing Belluile's memory, he thinkes so much on her affection, as he respects not her malice : but this Vice and that errour shall cost him deare; for whiles he is feasting his eyes on the dainties and rarities of Laurietts beauty, Belluile's heart hath agreed with the devill to prepare him a bloody banquett: Grace cannot containe him within her limits; therefore impiety dallies

dallies so long with him, and he with impiety, that at last this bloody sentence is past in the court of his hellish resolutions, that *Poligny* must die. The devils assistance is neuer wanting in such infernall stratagems: for this is an infallible maxime, as remarkable as ruinous, that hee alwaies makes vs fertill, not barren to doe euill, neuer to doe good. At first *Belluile* thinkes on *Poyson* or *Pistol* to dispatch *Poligny*: but he findes the first too difficult to attempt; the second, too publicke to performe. Some-times he is of opinion to ascend his Chamber, and murther him in his bed, then to shooch him out at window as he passeth the streete: but to conclude, vnderstanding that he often comes very late in the night from *Lauriets*, he thinkes it best to run him thorow with his Rapier, as hee issueth foorth her house: and to make short, thereon hee resolves.

Now to put the better colour on his villany, hee retires himselfe from *Aigignon*, and liues priuately some sixe daies in *Orange*: giuing it out, that he was gone to the City of *Aix* in *Prouence*, where at that famous Court of *Parliament* he had a Processe for a title of Land, shortly to be adiudged; & so in a darkenight, taking none but his Lackey with him, he being disguised, in fauour of money passeth the gate of *Aigignon*, and giuing his horse to his Lackey, being secretly informed that *Poligny* was with *Lauriets*, he goes directly to her doore; and there at the corner of a little street stands with his Rapier drawne vnder his cloake, with a reuenging and greedy desire of bloud to await *Poligny's* comming foorth. The clock striking one, the doore is opened, and *Poligny* secretly issueth foorth

foorth without candle, hauing purposely sent away his Lackey, who had then vnwittingly carried away his Masters Rapier with him. He is no sooner in the street, but *Belluile* as a murtherous vilaine rusheth foorth, and so like a limbe of the devill, sheathes his Rapier in his brest, when *Polygon* more hurted then amazed, and wanting his sword, but not courage, endeuoureth by struggling to cloze with his assassinat, and so cries out for assistance: but the dead of the night fauoureth his butcherly attempt, when withdrawing his sword, he redoubleth his cruelty, and so againe runnes him in at the small of the belly thorow the reines, whereat he presently falls downe dead to his feet, hauing the power to groane and cry, but not to vtter a word: which *Belluile* espying, and knowing him dispatcht, runs to his horse, which his Lackey held ready at the corner of the next street, and so rides to the same gate hee entered, which was kept ready for him, which passing, he with all expedition driues away for *Orenge*: from whence, the next morne before day, hee takes poast for *Aix*, the better to conceale and o're-vaille this damnable murther of his. But this policy of his shall deceiue his hopes, and retorne him a fatall reward and interest. For although he can blearie the eyes of men; yet he neither can nor shall those of God: who in his due time will out of his sacred justice repay and punish him with confusion.

By this time the street and neighbours hane taken the *Allarum* of this Tragical accident: so candles and torches come from every where; onely *Lauries* hauing played the whore before, will seeme now (though

( though falsly ) to play the honest ; woman for she, to couer her shame, will not discouer that her selfe or any of her house are stirring ; and so although she vnderstood this newes, and priuately and bitterly wept thereat ; yet, she keepest fast her doores , and like an ingratefull strumpet, will permit none of her servants for a long time to descend. The Criminal Judge & President of the City, is aduertised of this murther. The dead Gentleman is knowne to be Monsieur Poligny, and being beloued, he is exceedingly bewailed of all who knew him, and enquiry and search is made of all sides, & the Lieutenant Criminal shewes himselfe wife, because honest and curious, because wife in the perquisition of this bloudy murther : but as yet time will not, or rather God, who is the Creator and giuer of time, is not as yet pleased to bring it to light ; onely Lauriette knew, and la Palaisiere suspected, and all thole who were of the counsell of the one, or the acquaintance of the other, doe likewise both feare and suspect, that onely Bellusile was the bloudy and execrable Authour thereof ; but to report or divulge so much, althought they dare, they will not.

As for la Palaisiere, her thoughts are taken vp, and preoccupied with two severall passions : for as she grieues at Poligny's death , so she reioyceth that she hath no hand, nor was any way accessary to his murther ; rather, that if he had sayled by the compasse of her aduice , hee had vndoubtedly auoided the shipwrack of his life, and prevented the misfortune of his death ; what to thinke of Bellusile, she knowes not, but if he were her friend before , he hath now made & proclaimed himselfe her enemy, by killing her deare

and onely friend *Polygn*, and therefore is resoluſd  
that as ſhe could never perfectly brooke his com-  
pany, ſo now this his bloody fact ſhall make her de-  
test both it and him. But let vs a little leauē her, and  
descend to ſpeak of *Lauries*, to ſee how ſhe brookes  
the murther of her intimate friend *Polygn*. for lith ſhe  
aſſuredly knowes and beleues, that this cruell mu-  
ther was performed by no other, but by her profeſſed  
enemy *Belluile*, or by ſome of his bloody agents; loue  
and reuenge conſpire to act two diſſerent ſcenes vpon  
the Theatre of her heart: for in memory and deepe  
affection to her *Polygn*, her pearly teares, and  
mournfull ſighes infinitely deplore and bewaile his  
diſaſterous end, ſo as ſorrow withering the roses of  
her cheekeſ, and griefe making her caſt off her gilt-  
tering, to take a mournfull attire; ſhe could not re-  
fraine from giving all *Auignion* notice how pleaſing  
*Polygn*'s life was to her, by the excess of her lamenta-  
tions and afflictions demonſtrated for his death;  
or if her ſighes found any conſolation, or her teareſ  
reſceſſor truce, it was adminiſtriſtred her by her reuenge,  
which ſhe conceiued and intended towards *Belluile*  
for this his bloody fact. So as consulting with *Choller*,  
not with Reaſon; with Nature, not with Grace, with  
Satan, not with God; ſhe vowed to be sharply re-  
uegged of him, and to make him pay deare for this  
his baſe and treacherous murther: yea, the fumes and  
fury of her reuenge are ſo implacable, and tranſport  
her reſolutions to ſo bloody an impetuosity, that re-  
fembling her ſex and ſelſe, or not her ſelſe, but rather a  
monſter of her ſex, ſhe inhumanely and ſacrilegiouſ-  
ly darts foorth an oath, which her heart ſends to her  
ſoule,

soule, and her soule from earth to hell, that if the  
meanes finde nor her, she will infallibly finde out the  
meanes to quench and dry vp her teates for *Poligny's*  
death, in the bloud of *Bellisle*: which sith shce is so  
deuoyd of Reason, Religion and Grace, I feare, wee  
shall shortly see her attempt and performe. But lea-  
ving her in *Anigion*, let us finde out *Bellisle* in *Aix*:  
who is a *Gentleman* so prophane in his life, and de-  
boshed in his actions and copuerations, as in stead  
of repenting, he triumphs at this his murther; yea, he  
is become so impious and impudent, as he grieues  
not thereat, but onely that bee had not sooner dis-  
patched his Riuall *Poligny*; but the better to delude  
the world, that neither his hand, or sword were guilty  
in sending *Poligny* from this world in a bloody  
winding sheete; his thoughts like so many hounds  
pursuing his conscience, and his conscience his soule;  
he thinkes himselfe not safe in *Aix*, where the sharpe-  
sighted *Presidents*, and *Councillors* of that *Illustrious*  
*Senat of Parliament* might at last accuse and finde him  
out for the Authour of this bloody murther; and therefore  
leaves both it and *Prouence*, and so rides  
to the *City of Lyons*, accompanied with none but his  
two Lackeyes: who, to write the truth, acted no part  
in *Poligny's* mournefull Tragedy, neither doth he yet  
think himselfe safe there; but within a moneth after  
the murther, thinking directly and securely to flie  
from the eyes and hands of iustice, thereby to auoyde  
the storme of his punishment; he againe takes horse  
for that great *City & Forest Paris*, wherehee hoped  
the infinit number of People, Streets, Coaches, and  
Horses would not onely secure his seare, but preuent

his danger, and that here, as in a secure *Sanctuary* and safe harbour, hee might quietly ride at anchor in all peace and tranquillity: but (as before) the time is not yet come of his punishment, for it may be, God, out of his inscrutable will and divine prouidence, will, when he best pleaseth, returne him from whence he came, & by some extraordinary accident, make him there feele the soulenesse of his fact, in the sharpenesse and suddeenesse of his punishment: which as a fierce gust and bitter storm, shall then surprize him, when he least suspectes or dreames therof: but in this *Interim* of his residence, he forgets his new fact of murther, to remember his old sins of concupisence & whoredom, and so rather like a lasciuious Courtier, then a ciuill morall *Christian*, he cannot see the Church for the stewes, nor the Preachers, or Priests, for panders & strumpets. But this vanity of his shall cost him deare, and he shalbe so miserable to feele the punishment, sith he will not be so happy to seeke the meanes to annoyde it. For now sixe monthe having exhausted and dissipated the greatest part of his gold, and his credit comming short of his hopes, it seemes, the aire of *Paris* is displeasing to him, sith he cannot be agreeable to it; & therfore (necessity giuing a law to the vanity of his desires) he begins to loath the *Ile of France*, to loue the Province of *Provence*, & to loue *Paris*, to see *Auignion*. And now it is that the deuyl, that subtil and fatal seducer, steps in, and at one time, bewitching both his reason and iudgement, presents him afresh with the freshnes & delicacy of *Lanrieta's* beauty, which so inkindleth & reuiues the sparks of his affectiō, that lay raked vp in the ashes of silence, as he vowed there is no beauty to hers; & if he chance

eipy

espy any faire Ladies, either at Court, or in the City, he presently affirmeth, and infinitely protesteth, they come farre short of his *Laurietta's* delicacy, perfection, and grace ; so as his purse tyrannizing o're his ambition, and his concupiscence o're his iudgement, he not so much as once dreaming of the implacable hatred shee formerly bore him , and thinking it impossible for her to conceiue, much lesse to know that hee murthered *Poligny* ; he is constant and resolute to reseeke the felicity to liue in her fauour and affection, or to dye in the pursuite thereof; but that will proue as impossible, as this apparant and feasable. So as absence adding fire to his lust , and excellency to her beauty , he is resolute to send one of his Lackies to *Auignion* : partly to returne with money , and so to meet him at *Lyons*, *Moulins* or *Nevers* : but more especially, in great secrerie to deliuier a Letter to his faire and sweet *Laurietta*, and to bring him backe her answere ; as if hee were still at *Paris*, and not in his iourney downewards : when meaning as yet to conceale his murther of *Poligny*, he calling for pen and paper, traceth her thereon these lines :

IF *Poligny* had but the shouerand part as truly respected  
me, as I dearely loued thee, thou hadst not soone cast me  
out of thy fauor, nor God so suddenly him out of this world:  
but I know not whether more to bewaile my unfortunacy oc-  
casional by thy cruelty, or his misery engendred through  
his owne treachery. And indeed as I grieue at that, so I for-  
row as this : for although hee dyed mine enemy, yet in de-  
spight of his malice and death, I will liue his friend : and if  
thou louedst him as I thinke thou didst, I wish I might fight  
with

with his murtherer for his owne sake, and kill him for thine. I may say, thy affection and beauty deserued his better, though dare not affirme, I am reserued to bee made happy in inioying of either, much lesse of both, and least of all, of thy selfe; and yet I must confesse, that if our births and qualities were knowne, I should goe as neere to be thy equall, as he infinitely came short of being mine. What or what I have performed for thy sake, is best knowne to my selfe, sith thou disdainest to know it: but if thou wilt please to abandon thy disdain, then my affection and the truth will informe thee, that I haue euer constantly resolued to dye thy servant, though thou haue sworne never to liue my Mistresse; so that could I but as happily regaine thy affection and favour, as I haue vnjustly and unforunately lost it, Belluile would quickly forsake Paris, to see Auignion, and abandon all the beauties of the world, to continue his homage and seruice to that of his onely faire and sweet Laurieta.

## BELLVILLE.

With this his Letter he sends a *Diamond Ring* from his finger, and so dispatcheth his Lackey, who is not long before he arrive at *Auignion*, where very secretly he deliuers *Laurieta* his Masters token and Letter, and, trecherous fury as shee is, shee kisseth both, and breaking off the seales, readeas the contents, whereat shee infinitely seemes to reioyce, and so questioneth with the Lackey about his Masters returne: who being taught his lesson, told her, that that depended of her pleasure, sith hers was his; and withall prayes her for an answere, for that two dayes hence he was againe to returne to his Master for *Paris*: the which shee promiseth. The Lackey gone, shee cannot refraine from laughing;

laughing; yea, she leapes for ioy, to see how Belluile  
is againe so besotted, to throw himselfe into her fauour  
and mercy, and to obserue how willing and forward he  
was to run hoodwinkt to his vntimely death and de-  
struction: for the diuell hath fortified her in her for-  
mer bloody resolution; so that hap what will, shee  
vowes she will not faile to kill Belluile, because he had  
slaine her Poligny; and already she wisth him in A-  
uignion, that she might see an end to this her wished  
and desired Tragedy. In the meane time shee pre-  
pares her hypocriticall and trecherous Letter, and a  
rich watchet Scarfe imbroydered with flames of siluer.  
So his Lackey repaireth to her, to whom shee deliu-  
reth both, with remembrance of her best loue to his  
Master, and that she hoped shortly to see him in A-  
uignion. The Lackey being prouided of his Masters  
gold, and this Scarfe and Letter, trips away speedily  
for Lions, where he findes his Master priuately hush't  
vp in a friends house, expecting his returne; he is glad  
of his owne gold, but more of Laurietta's Letter, when  
thinking euery minute a yeere before hee had read it,  
hee haſtily breaking off the seales, findes these lines  
therein contained:

**A**S I acknowledge I loued Poligny, so I confesse I never  
hated thee: and if his trecherous insinuation were too  
prevalent with my credulitie, I beseech thee attribute it to  
my indiscretion, as being a woman, and not to my inconstan-  
cy, as being thy friend: for if he dyed thy enemy, let it suf-  
fice, that I liue thine handmaid, and, that as he was not re-  
served for me, so I hope I am wholly for thy selfe. How farre  
he was my inferior, I will not enquire; onely it is both my  
content

content and honour, that thou please vouchsafe to repuse me  
thy equall: I am so farre from disdaining, as I infinitly  
desire to know what thou hast done for my sake, that I may  
requite thy loue with kisses, and make my thankes wipre off  
the conceit of my ingratitude. As for my affection, it was  
neuer lost to thee; nor shall ever be found but of thee. To  
conclude, I wish that our little Aaignion were the great Pa-  
ris, and if thy loue be as unfained as mine is firme, let my  
Belluile make haste to see his Laurieta, who hath vowed to  
reioyce a thousand times more at his retурne, then euer she  
grieved at Poligny's death.

## LAVRIETA.

At the reading of this her Letter, he is beyond him-  
selfe, yea beyond the Moone for ioy; so as hee wish-  
eth nothing so much, as himselfe in her armes, or shee  
in his. So he fits himselfe with a couple of good horses,  
puts his Lackeyes into new sutes, and knowing that  
time and his absence had washed away the remem-  
brance of *Poligny's* murther, he speeds away for *Aaignion*;  
where the very first night of his astiuall, hee pri-  
uately visiteth *Laurieta*, twixt whom there is nothing  
but kisses and imbracings; yea she so trecherously and  
sweetly lulles him asleepe with the *Syren* melody of her  
deceitfull speeches, as she prayes him to visit her often,  
and that a little time shall crowne him with the fruits  
of his desire. So for that night they part: the next day  
he repaires to her againe, when amidst the confluence  
of many millions of kisses, shee prayes and coniures  
him to discouer her what hee hath done for her sake:  
when he tying her by oath, to secretie, and shee swea-  
ring it, he relates her, that it was himselfe, that in af-  
fection

fection to her, had slaine *Pologny*, as he issued foorth her lodging : when hauing wreted and extorted this mystery from him, it confirmes her malice, and hasteneth on her resolution of his death, which his lasciuious thoughts haue neither the grace to foresee, nor the reason to preuent : she espies he hath still a Pistoll with him, and desires to know why he beares it ; Who answereth her, it is to defend himselfe from his enemies, and that he will never go without it. So againe they fal to their kisses, and he to his requestes of a further and sweeter fauour of her ; which she for that time againe denies him ; adding withall, that if he will come to her after dinner to morrow, she will so dispose of matters, as his pleasure shall be hers, and shee will not bee her owne, but his. So being surprized and rauished with the extasie of a thousand sweete approaching pleasures, he returnes to his chamber, and shee to her malice : where whiles he gluts himselfe with his hope of delight ; she doth no lesse with her desire of reuenge. And now ruminating on the manner of his death, she thinkes nothing so fit or easie to dispatch him, as his owne Pistoll : and so thinking she should need her waiting-maid *Lucillas* assistance, (of whom this our History hath formerly made mention) she acquaints her with her purpose, y<sup>e</sup> next day to murther *Belluile* in her chamber. And so with the lure of gold and many faire promises, drawes her to consent hereunto, and inioynes her to be provided of a good Ponyard vnder her gowne for the same purpose, if need should require ; which *Lucilla* promiseth. Now this night, as *Belluile* could not sleepe for ioy, so could not *Lauricta* for reuenge, who is so weighed downe to malice and

murther, as she wisheth the houre come for her to reduce her diuellish contemplation into bloody action. But this houre shall come too soone for them both: for as Louers are impatient of delayes, so Belluile hath no sooner dined, but taking his horse and two Lackeyes, he sayes hee will take the ayre of the fields, that afternoone, but will first call in and see his Mistresse, *Laurietta*. So he alights at her doore, and without the least feare of danger or apprehension of death, very ioyfully ascends *Laurietta*'s chamber: who dissembling wretch as she is, very kindly meets and receiveth him. And the better to smother and dissemble her murtherous intent, is not onely prodigall in taking, but in giuing him kisses. Belluile, like a dissolute and lasciuious Gentleman, whispers *Laurietta* in her eare, that he is come to receive the fruits of his hopes, and of her promise and courtesie: when considering that his horse and two Lackeyes were at doore, she returns him this in his eare, that shee is wholly his, and that it is out of her power to deny or refuse him any thing; onely she prayes him to send away his Lackeyes, because their familiarity needed no witnessesse. Thus whiles he calls them vp, to bid them carry away his horse to the gate that leades to *Murfeilles*, and there to await his comming; *Laurietta* steps to her Waiting-maid *Lucilla*, and bids her make ready her Ponyard, and stand close to her; for now (quoth shee) the houre is come that I will be revenged of Belluile, for my *Polyxenes* death: the which shee had no sooner spoken, but Belluile returnes to her, whē redoubling his kisses, he little, or rather not at all fearing hee was so neare death, or death him, being ready to retire him selfe

selfe to a withdrawing chamber, which *Laurietta* trecherously informed him she had purposelly prouided for him; he takes his Pistoll, and layes it on the table of the outer chamber wherin they then were : which she espying, as the instrument she infinitely desired to finger, takes it in her hand, & praies him to shew her how to shoot it off. So taking it from her, he told her, if she pleased, he would discharge it before her, for her sake. Why (quoth she) is it charg'd? Yea, replies *Belluile*, with a single bullet. Nay then (quoth *Laurietta*) put in one bullet more; and if you can espy any Crow out of window, either on the houle or Church top, if it please you, I will play the man, and shoot at it for your sake: When, poore *Belluile*, desirous to please her in any thing, lookest out the window, and espyes two Crows on the crose of the *Augustine Friers* Church, which he very ioyfully relates *Laurietta*; and so at her request claps in a second bullet more; for (quoth shee) if I strike not both, I will be sure to pay one; and so prayes him to leane out at window, to see how neere shee could feather them: which (miserable Gentleman) he performing, the Pistoll being bent, shee behind him dischargeth it directly in his owne reines. Whereat he amazedly staggering, *Lucilla* seconding her bloody *Mistresse*, steps to him, and with her Ponyard giues him five or fixe wounds thorow the body; so as without speaking or groaning, hee falleth dead at their feet. Whereat *Laurietta* triumphing and leaping for ioy, vttereth these bloody and prophane speeches: *O Polygny*, whiles thou art in heaven, thus haue I done in earth for thy sake, and in revenge of thy cruell death! Which hauing performed, they more cruell then cru-

cry her selfe, dray his breathlesse carkasse reeking in his blood, downe the staires, into a low obscure Cellar, where making a shallow graue, they there bury him in his clothes, and so pile vp a great quantity of Billets on him; as if that wooden monument had power to conceale their muether, and his body from the eyes and suspition of all the world. Good God! what diuels incarnate, and infernall furies are these, thus to imbrue their hands in the blood of this Gentleman? But as close as they act and contrive this their bloody and inhumane murther on earth; yet heauen will both detect and reuenge it: for when they least dreame thereof, Gods wrath and vengeance will surprize them to their vetter confusion, and destruction; and it may be sooner then they are aware of.

For the two Lackeyes hauing stayed at the City gate with their Masters horse till night, they returne and seeke him at *Lauriets* house where they left him. *Lauriet* informes them hee stayed not an houre after them, and since she saw him not: which newes doth infinitely afflitt and vexe them. But they returne to his lodging, and like dutifull and faithfull seruants, betwixt hope and feare, await his retурne that night, and all the next day; but in vaine. And now they begin to be amazed at his long and vnaccustomed absence, and so consult this important busines to some Gentlemen, their Masters confident & intimate friends; who together with them, repaire to *Lauriet* s house, and againe and again demand her for *Monsieur de Belluile*; but they find her constant in her first answere, and yet guided by the finger & prouidence of God, they bewray a kind of perturbation in her looks, & discouer some distraction

and

and extrauagancy in her speeches:wherupon calling to their minds her former discountifise to him for *Poligny's* sake,& his fighting with him on the bridge for hers,as also this sudden & violent suspected murther of him ; they suspect and feare , there is more in the winde then as yet they know : and so acquaint the *Criminall Judges* herewith,who as wise *Senators*,hauing severally examined both her and her maide *Lucilla*, and *Poligny's* Lackies , they conclude to imprison *Laurietta*; which is instantly performed:whereat she is extremely amazed and terrifiied : but howsoeuer,she is resolute to deny all, and constant to stand vpon her iustification and innocency. So her Judges adiudge her to the torments of the Rack,which(with a masculine,yea with a hellish fortitude) she endureth,without reuealing the least shaddow, either of feare, or guiltinesse: but they detaine her still prisoner, and hope that *God* will make time discouer the murther of *Belluile*: for eight daies being now past,they are become confident that he is not in this world, but in another. In the meane time, her bloudy Wayting-maid *Lucilla* hath continuall recourse to her Lady *Laurietta* in prison, where, like impious & prophane wretches,they interchangeably sweare secrerie ech to other,sith on eithers discouery,depends no leſſe then both their deaths.

Whiles this newes is generally divulged in *Auignon*,*Prouence*, *Daulphine* and *Languedock*, and no newes at all to be had or gathered of *Belluile*; *La Palaisiere*, who shined with as many Vertues, as *Laurietta* was obscured with Vices ; out of compassion and Christi-an charity, some three weekes after visiteth *Laurietta* in prison , although ſhee partly beleueed and knew,

that shoo never affected or loued her; when syning to adde consolation to her afflictions, as God would haue it, *Laurietta*, out of her ignorance or folly, returns *la Palaisiere* this vnlooked for answer: That her selfe was as innocent of *Belluile's* death, as she was of *Poligny's*. Whiche words being ouer-heard by some curios head of the company, were instantly carried and reported to the *Criminall Judges*, who instantly cause *la Palaisiere* to be apprehended and brought before them, whom they examine vpon *Poligny's* death; which doth no way affright or afflict her, because her conscience was vtainted, and her selfe as innocent as innocency her selfe thereof. They deale further with her, to vnderstand the passages of former busynesses betwixt her selfe, *Poligny*, and *Belluile*. She giues them a true and faithfull account therof, yea, and relates them as much and no more, then this *Histroy* hath formerly related vs: and to verifie and confirme her speeches, like a discreet young *Gentlewoman*, she giues them the keyes of a trunke of hers, wherein she sayeth is her copy of a Letter she wrote to *Poligny*, and his answere againe to her, which shoo payes them to send for, for her better cleering and discharge. The *Judges* send speedily away for these Letters, which are found, produced and read, directly concurring with the true circumstance of her former deposition: whereupon with much applause and commendation, they acquit and discharge her. But if *la Palaisiere's* Vertues haue cleared her, *Laurietta's* Vices (which the *Judges* beginne to smell out by *Poligny's* letter) doe the more narrowly and fircightly imprison her; and yet knowing that *la Palaisiere* neither

ther had, nor could any way accuse her, for either of these two murthers; she sets a good face on her bad heart, and so very brauely frolliks it in prison; and to speake truth, with far more ioy, & lesse feare then heretofore: but to check and ouer-throw these vaine triumphs of hers in their birth, and to nip them in their buds, newes is now brought her, that her Wayting-maid *Lucilla* is secretly fled: which her Judges understanding, they now more vehemently then euer heretofore suspect, that (without doubt) *Laurietta* wast the authour, and her maide *Lucilla* the accessary of *Belluile's* murther: and so they set all the City and Country for her apprehension: and this newes indeed makes *Laurietta* feare that she will infallibly be taken, which doth afflict and amaze her, and indeed hereat she cannot restraine from biting her lippe, and hanging downe her head. But see the miraculous and iust iudgement of the Lord, vpon this wretched and bloudie *Lucilla!* for shee, for feare flying, as it is supposed, that night from *Amignion* to *Oringe*, to her Parents, was there drowned, and the next morne found and taken vp dead in one of the Fenny Lakes betwixt the two Cities. Which newes being reported to *Laurietta*, she againe converts her feare into hope, and sorrowes into ioyes, as knowing well, that dead bodies can tell no tales. But the wisdom and integrity of the Judges, by the apparancy of *Laurietta's* crime, in that of her Wayting-maids flight, againe command her to be racked: but the deuill is yet so strong with her, and she with the deuill, that she againe endures the cruelty of these torments with a wonderfull patience, with an admirabile constancy and resolution; and so courageously

ragiously, and stoutly denying her crime, and peremptorily maintaining her innocency and justification, her Judges, led by the consideration of the sharpenesse and bitternesse of her torments, as also that they could finde no direct prooef, or substantiall evidence against her, begin to conceiue and imagine, that it might be the Wayting-maide, and not the Mistris, that had sent *Belluile* into another world; and so resolute the weeke following, if they heard nothing in the meane time, to accuse *Laurietta*, to release and acquite her; which *Laurietta* vnderstanding, the torments which her limbs & body feele, are nothing in respect of those contentments and ioyes her hart & thoughts conceiue: and already building Castles and triumphs in her heart and contemplations, for the hope and ioy of her speedy enlargement, shee, in her apparell and behauisour, flants it out farre brauer then before. But she hath not yet made her peace with her Judges, neither haue they pronounced her *Quiesca est*. And alas, how foolishly and ignorantly doe the vanity of her hopes deceiue and betray her, when as the foulenesse of her soule, and contamination of her conscience, eury houre and minute prompt her, that *God*, the Judge of *Judges*, who hath seene, will in his good time and pleasure both detect and punish as well her whoredome as her murther, in her death! And lo, here comes both the cause, and the manner thereof, wherein Gods prouidence and justice doe miraculously resplend and shine.

For *Laurietta* being indebted to her Land-lord *Monsieur de Richcourt*, as well for a whole yeeres rent, as for three hundred Livres in money, which hee had lent her,

her being impatient of her delaines, but more of her disgrace, lets out that part of his house which she held of him, to the *Deane of Carpentras*, who for his healths sake came to sojourne that Winter in *Auignion*: and desparying of her enlargement, and to satisfie himselfe, begins to sell away her housshould-stuffe, yea, to the very billets which she had in her Celler: which hee retaines for himselfe, whereof when his seruants came to cleare the Celler, they remouing the last billets, finde the earth newly remoued and opened, in the length and proportion of a graue, wherof wondering, they presently informe their Master; who viewing the same, as God would haue it, he instantly apprehended and beleueed, that *Laurieta* had vndoubtedly killed *Belluile*, and there buried him: when not permitting his seruants to remoue the least iot of earth, he as a discreet and honest Citizen, with all possible celerity trips away to the Criminallyes, and acquaints them herewith: who concurring with *Richcourt* in his opinion and belief, they dispeade themselues to his house and Celler, where causynge the new opened earth to be remoued, behold, they finde the miserabile dead body of *Belluile* there inhumanely throwne in and buried in his cloathes; which causynge to be taken off, thereby to search his body, they finde him shot into the reines with two Pistoll bullets, and his body stabbed and pierced with sixe severall wounds of a Rapier or Poniard: they are amazed at this pittifull and lamentable spectacle; and so resting confident it could be no other but *Laurieta* and her maide *Lucilla*, that had committed this cruell murther, they very priuately and secretly cause *Belluile's* dead body to bee

conueyed to the prison, and therv when *Laurietta* least  
dreamt thereof, expose it to her sight, and in rough  
tearmes charge and crie out vpon her for this mur-  
ther; but this monster of Nature, and shee-deuill of  
her sexe, hath yet her heart so obdurated with re-  
uenge, and her soule so o're-clouded and benumm'd  
with impiety, as she is nothing daunted, or terrified  
with the sight hereof; but with many fearefull impre-  
cations and asseuerations stands peremptorily in her  
innocency, and out of the heate of her malice and  
choller, tearmes them devils or witches that are her  
accusers: but her *Judges*, who can no longer be delu-  
ded with her vowes, nor will no more giue eare to  
her perfidious oaths, command to haue her Paps  
feared off with hot burning Pincers, thereby to vindi-  
cate the truth of her cruell murther, from the falsehood  
of her impious, and impudent deniall thereof: where-  
at amazed and astonisched, and seeing this cruell tor-  
ment ready to be inflicted and presented her, God  
was so indulgent to her sinnes, and so mercifull to her  
soule; as the deuill flying from her, and she from his  
temptations, she rayning downe many riuolts and  
showres of teares from her eyes, and euaporating  
many volleyes of fighes from her heart, throwing  
her selfe downe on her knees to the earth, and lifting  
vp her eyes and harts vnto *Heauen*, with much be-  
wayling and bitternessse, she at last confesseth to her  
*Judges*, that she and her Wayting-maide *Lucilla* were  
the murtherers of *Belluile*, and for the which shee  
sayd, that through her humble contrition and hearty  
repentance, shee hoped that God would pardon her  
soule in the life to come; though shee knew they  
would

would not her body in this. Whereupon the *Judges*, in horrour and execration of her inhumane and bloody crime, pronounce sentence of death vpon her, and condemne her the next day after dinner, first to be hanged, then burnt in the same street, right against her lodging, *Monsieur de Richcours* house: and likewise, sith *Lucilla* was both an accessary, and actor in this bloody Tragedy, that her body shold be taken vp out of her graue, & likewise burnt with hers in the same fire: which accordingly was executed in the presence of an infinite number of people both of the Citizens, and adiacent neighbours of *Auignion*, *Laurieta* vttering on the ladder a short, but a most Christian and penitent speech to the people, tending first to dissuade them all by her example, from those soule & crying sinnes of whoredome, reuenge and murther, and then to request and perswade them, that they would assist her with their religious and devout prayers, in her soules passage and flight towards heauen: yet adding withall, that as her crime, so her griefe was redoubled, because as she had killed *Belluile* for *Poligny's* sake, so she was sure that *Belluile* had kill'd *Poligny* for hers.

And thus, Christian Reader, were the dissolute liues and mournefull deaths of these two vnfortunate *Gentlemen*, *Poligny* and *Belluile*, and of this lasciuious and bloody Courtisan *Laurieta*, and her Wayting-maide *Lucilla*. A *Tragical History*, worthy both of our obseruation and detestation; and indeed these are the bitter fruits of Lust, Whoredome and Reuenge, and the inseparable companions, which infallibly awayte and attend them, the very sight and consideration where-

of, are capeable, not onely to administer consolation to the righteous, but to strike terror to the vngodly.

O therefore, that we may all beware by these their fatall and dangerous sinnes: for this is the onely perfect and true way to preuent and auoyde their punislaments.

---

THE

---



THE  
TRIUMPHS OF  
GODS REVENGE AGAINST  
the crying and execrable sinne  
of Murther.

History IX.

Iacomo de Castelnou lustfully falleth in loue with his daughter in law Perina, his owne sonne Francisco de Castelnou's wife; whom to inioy, he causeth Ierantha first to poysone his owne Lady Fidelia, and then his said sonne Francisco de Castelnou: in reuenge whereof, Perinatrecherously murthereth him in his bed: Ierantha ready to dye in trauell of child, confesseth her two murthers; for the which she is hanged and burnt. Perina hath her right hand cut off, and is condemned to perpetuall imprisonment, where she sorrowfully languisheth, and dyes.

WE need not send our curiositie (or our curiositie vs) to seeke *Tigers* and monsters in *Africa*: for Europe hath but too many, who are so cruell and inhumane, not onely to imbrue, but to im-

bathē themselues in the innocent blood of their Christian brethren. And as Religion prohibits vs to kill, and commands vs to loue our enemies: with what audacious and prophane impiety dare wee then murther our friends, nay those of our owne blood, and who are the greatest part of our felues? And although Italy haue lately affoorded many tragical presidents, and fearefull examples of this nature, (whereof I haue giuen some to my former, and reserued others to my future booke) yet in my conceit it hath produced none more bloody and inhumane then this, whether wee respect the murthers, or the persons. For here we shall see a wretched and execrable old man so besotted in lust, and flaming in malice and reuenge, as being both a husband and a father, he by a hellish young Gentlewoman (his strumpet) poysoneth both his owne wife, and his owne sonne: it was his vanity which first enkindled the fire of his lust: it is then his impiety which giues way for the diuell to blow the coales thereto, and so to conuert it into murther. O that sinne should so miserably triumph o're grace, and not grace o're sinne! O that age and nature should not teach vs to bee less bloody, and more compassionate, and charitable! And Alas, alas, by poyson, that drug of the diuell, who first brought the damnable inuention thereof from hell, to be practised heere on earth onely by his agents and members! We shall likewise see him killed by his daughter in law, for formerly poysoning her husband: lust seduced him to perpetrate those; affection, or rather bloody reuenge, drew her on to performe this, and consequently to her punishment due for the same. Had they had more Grace, and Religion, they would not haue

haue been so inhumane : but falling from that, no maruell if they fell to be so wretched and miserable : for if we dye well, we seldome liue ill ; if liue ill, wee vsually neuer dye well : for it is the end that crownes the beginning, not the beginning the end : therefore if wee will be happy in our liues, and blessed in our deaths, we must follow vertue, and ffe from vice: loue *chastity* and *charity*, and hate lust and enuie; preferre *Heauen* aboue Earth ; our soules before our bodies ; and defie Satan, with a holy resolution both to feare and loue God.

*Sauoy* is the Countrey, and *Nice* the City, (seated vp on the *Mediterraneum* sea, being the strongest Bulwarke against *France*, and the best fortresse and key of *Italy*) where the *Scene* of this insuing tragicall *History* is laid : the which to refetch from the head-spring and fountaine of its *Originall*, it must carry our curiositie and vnderstanding ouer ( those famous Mountaines ) the *Alpes*, and from thence to the *City* of *Saint John de Mauriena*, where of late and fresh memory dwelt an aged *Gentleman*, of rich reuenues and great wealth, named *Seignior Antonio de Arconetto*, who had newly by his deceased wife, the *Lady Eleanora de Bibanti*, two children, to wit, a sonne, and a daughter ; that, named *Seignior Alexandro*, and this, the *Lady Perina*, a little different in yeeres, for he was eightene, and shee but fiftene ; but more in qualities and conditions : for hee was by *Nature* peruerse and cholericke, but she, milde, courteous and gracious. Againe, they differed much in the lineaments and proportion of their bodies : for *Alexandro*, like his father, was short, crook-backt, and hard-fauoured ; and *Perina* resembling her mother, tall, straight-wasted, and faire: so as it being a principle and

and Maxime in Nature, that parents (for the most part) loue those children best, who best resemble them; as the mother Eleanora preser'd Perina in her affection, before Alexandro: so contrariwise their father Arcone to did Alexandro, before Perina. But as God had called Eleanora out of this life, and left her husband to suruiue her: so Alexandro's ioy prou'd his sister Perina's misery & affliction: for he was so happy to see himselfe tenderly cherished & affected, & she so vnfornatuate to perceiue her selfe slighted & disrespected of her father: wherin as I praise Arconeto's intimate loue to his son, so I cannot but discommend, and withal pity his immerited and vnnaturall neglect to his daughter: wherein as Alexandro triumphed in the one; iudge, iudicious Reader, if Perina had not cause enough to grieue and lament at the other. But as the drift and scope of this History lookes another way; so for my part, who haue vndertaken to pen it, it is the least of my intent or purpose to give instructions and directions, how parents should beare themselves in their affections towards their children: onely because I may not here too palpably bewray mine ignorance in my silence, I hope, nay, I am confident, that with as much truth as safety I may conclude, it is a happiness both for parents and children, where parents beare their affections equally to their children: for louing one, and hating another, the ioy of the one, proues oftentimes the others sorrow; and in giuing that too much hope, we many times administer this too much cause of despair: or if the inclinations and affections of parents bee more narrowly tyed, and strictly linked to preferre and loue one child aboue the other: yet sith they are the equall

equall issue of our loynes, and we the onely parents of their youth, we should be as well cautious in the distribution of our fauours, as in the demonstration of our dis-respects towards them. But enough of this digression: and now againe to our History.

As *Alexandro* grows vp in yeres, so he doth in ambition & ostentation: for if he play the *Brauasho* abroad among Gentleme & Ladies, so authorized by his fathers hatred of his sister, he at home becomes a petty tyrant to her: yea, his carriage is so sterne and impious towards her, as if she were rather his slauue then his sister; or his laundres & hand-maid, then any part of himself: which notwithstanding it was both a daily griefe to her hart, and a continual torment to her thoughts: yet *Perina*'s sweet perfections, & gracious vertues & behauior, make her digest and brooke all with a wonderfull constancy, and an admirable patience: for well she knowes, that if she should complaine to her father of her brothers vndickness towards her, shée should thereby reape no other remedy or redresse but this, that the one would laugh, and the other triumph thereat; and that the issue thereof would prooue her complaints to bee the May-game of the one, and mocking-stocke of the other. But God hath ordained briefly to ease her of a great part of her vndeserved discontents and afflictions: For lo, her brother *Alexandro*, debauching and surfetting at a banquet at *Susa*, returnes home, surprised of a hot pestilent Feuer, which notwithstanding the care of his father, or the art of his expertest Physicians, he in three dayes is taken out of this life.

And now guided by the light of *Nature*, and the instinct of common sence and reason, who would not

furmize or thinke, but that *Arconeto* hauing buried his sonne *Alexandro*, shoulde now loue his onely daughter and child *Perina*, farre dearer and tenderer then before. But alas, nothing lesse: for he is not so kinde, and therefore she cannot bee so happy: yea which is worse, although his words be her commands, and his pleasure her law, yet he contemnes both her and her obedience, and never lookes on her with loue and affection, but still with difdaine and enuie. Yea, in a word, his distaste is so extreme & bitter against her, as he is neuer best pleased, then when she is furthest from him; so as her absence may delight and content him, but her presence cannot. Which vnatural disrespect, and vniust cruelty of her father towards her, doth so nip the ioyes of her youth, and the blossomes of her health and beauty; as poore young Gentlewoman, she becomes infinite melancholy, and extreme weake and sickly: which being obserued and pityed of all her kinsfolkes and friends, as being her fathers onely child and heire to all his lands and riches, an Aunt of hers, being her mothers sister, and likewise her God-mother, tearmed the *Lady Dominica*, a widow woman of the same City, workes so with her brother in law *Arconeto*, that he is content to permit his daughter *Perina* to reside and dwell with her: Whereat, as the Aunt is not a little glad, so the Neece beyond measure infinitely reioyceth, and triumphes thereat: both hoping that her absence may, and will procure her fathers affection, which her presence could not; and that hauing more liberty and lesse bondage, she might again in a short time recouer her former health and content; or else that God, out of his diuine prouidence and pleasure

pleasure in heauen, might call and allot her out some gallant husband heere on earth, with whom, in the contents and pleasures of marriage, she might end her future dayes in as much tranquillity and felicity, as she had formerly liued in discontent and affliction: and indeed the euent, though not in the first, yet in the two last poyncts, answereþ their expectations.

The Lady *Dominica* hath formerly contracted a daughter of hers, named *Dona Bertha*, to a Cauallier of the City of *Nice*, tearmed *Seignior Bartolomeo Spelafis*, by descent noble, and of good reuenues and wealth. And now the appoynted time is come for their marriage: to which end, vp comes *Spelafis* from *Nice* to Saint *John de Mauriene*, assisted and followed by many gallant young Gentlemen of his kinsfolkes and friends: and in a word, with a traine well befitting his ranke and quality, where these nuptials are solemnized with great variety of pompe and pleasure; as feasting, dancing, Maskes, running at the Ring, and the like: for in these amorous and Courtlike Revels, the *Sauoyards* (as participating both of the *French* and *Italian* humours) take a singular delight and felicity. But as many times one wedding occasioneth and produceth another, so Fortune, or to speake more properly and truly, God ordained, that the *Lady Dominica* appoynted her Neece *Perina*, to conduct the Bridegroome her sonne in law *Spelafis*, to the Church; and he had allotted one of the nobleſt and eminent *Cavalliers* that came with him, named *Seignior Francisco de Castelnou*, to performe the same ceremony to his Bride the *Dona Bertha*, being a Knight of *Malta*, native of the City of *Nice*, and sonne and heire to *Seignior*

Seignior Iacomo de Castelnuo, a very ancient and rich Baron of Saney. Now as Perina was a most beautifull and faire young Lady, so was our young Castelnuo a very proper and gallant Caualier: and sith the occasion of this marriage, and the fortunacy and opportunity of their vnted office, by a kinde of destinated & happy priuiledge, authorized each to be familiar in the others company and presence: so as Louers begin to court first in iest, then in earnest: the hearts and brests of this sweet young couple, are in the end equally surprized with the flame of affection: yea, his personage and dancing, and her beauty and singing, mutually inkindle this fire of loue in their thoughts and contemplations, which either imagineth, and both perceiue and understand, by the dumbe Oratory and silent Rhetoricke of their eyes: which Castelnuo knowing her descent and quality answerable to his, hee intends to seeke her in marriage: when not any longer to surpresse or conceale their affections, they after dinner dancing in company of diuers others in the garden, he singeth the Lady Perina his new Mistris apart in a Bower closely ouer-vaild with Vines, Oycamours, & Cypress trees, and there twixt sighes and words, reueales her his deepe and seruent affection to her. But to auoid the prolixious relation of this their garden enteriuew and conference: although at first, Perina's modesty (the sweetest ornament and vertue of a Lady) was such, as she not onely kept her selfe, but likewise her affections to her selfe: yet her courteous and thankfull answeres, waited and seconded by many delicious blushes, and amorous sighes, although not publikely, yet priuately inform'd her Louer Castelnuo; that shee likewise

likewise loued him: so as during the tearme of fifteene daies which Spelassie and he remained in Saint John de Mauriene, he never left courting her, till he had obtained her affection, and consent to be his wife: drawne thereunto by these two attractiue and seducing reasons: first, that Castelnoue was a gallant and proper Cauallier; as also her equall in descent and meanes, and then that she should live in Nice with a husband that dearely loued her, and no longer in Saint John de Mauriene with a father, who extremely hated her; neither can these our young louers beare their affections so secret, but the whole company, especially the Lady Dominica her Aunt perceiues it, and deeming it an equall and fit match for her Neece, reioyceth thereat. Castelnous secretly acquaints her therewith, and intreats her best assistance therein towards her brother Arconeto: which she promiseth, & forthwith attempteth, when Castelnoue taking time at aduantage, seconds her in his suite for the daughter, to her old father.

Now her father Arconeto (degenerating from the naturall affection of a father towards his daughter) is so willing to depart with her to any husband, that he may no more see her, nor be trouled with her presence, as thinking a farre worse match good enough, he thinkes this infinitly too good for her, and so at the least shaddow of the very first motion, consents thereunto, which not onely banitheth Perina's old griefe, but confirmeth Castelnoue's new joyes: yea, they, like two sweet and vertuous Louers, so extreme-  
ly reioyce and triumph thereat, as he riding home poast to Nice, to acquaint his owne father Seignior Iacomo;

*Iacomo de Castelnou therewith, and swiftly returning againe to Saint John de Mauriene with his consent and approbation, this marriage of Castelnou and Perina, is there almost as soone solemnized, as that of Spelass and Bertha, though indeed more obscure, and with farte less pompe and brauery, in respect of the peruerfesse and distaste of her froward old father Arconeto.* So fifteene dayes being expired since Spelass and Castelnou their first departure from Nice, they leauē Saint John de Mauriene, to returne and conduct their brides home to *Nice*, robbing that to enrich this City, with two such beautifull and gallant Ladies, as were *Bertha* and *Perina*.

Now the better to adde life and forme to this History; or rather to approach the more materiall and essentiall parts thereof: we must here leauē to speake of Spelass and Bertha, and wholly tie our thoughts and curiositie to Castelnou and Perina, two principall and unfortunat Personators, who both haue mournfull parts to act vpon the stage and Theatre of *Nice*: for this mariage of theirs is not begun with the tenth part of so many joyes, as we shall shortly see it wayted and attended on, yea dissolved and finished both with teares and bloud.

*Iacomo de Castelnou*, hauing brought home his faire and deare *Perina* to *Nice*, she is very honourably welcomed, and courteously receiuē and entertained of his old father *Seignior Iacomo de Castelnou*, and of the Lady *Fidelia* his mother, and so are all her kin-folkes and friends, who accompany her: yea, there wants no feasting nor revelling in *Nice*, to testifie how much they congratulate and reioyce at this their

sions good fortune & happines. And for *Castelnou* and *Perina* themselues, why they are so rauished in the content, and drowned in the ioyes and delights of marriage, as though they haue two bodies, yet they haue but one heart, desire and affection: yea, they are so extremely in loue each with other, as they beleue there is no *Heauen* vpon *Earth*, to that of each others presence: but they shall be deceised herein: for there are Tragicall stormes arising, to trouble the serenity of this marriage, and the felicity and tranquillity of these affections.

For it is both with griefe and shame, that I must be so immodest; and therefore vnfortunate to relate, that the old *Baron Iacomo de Castelnou*, aged of some three-score and eight yeeres, hath so farre forgotten his God and himselfe, his conscience and his soule, grace and nature, religion and humanity, as gazing on the fresh and delicious beauty of our sweet *Lady Perina*, his owne sonnes wife, he giues the reines, both of his obscene desires, and inordinate affections to lust after her. O how my heart trembles to thinke, how he that is white with the snow of a venerable age, should now lasciuiously idolatrise to beauty! how he that hath (as it were) one foote in his graue, should lustfully desire to haue the other in his sonnes bed! how he that hath his veines dried vp and withered, and nothing liuing in him but desire, should yet, of all the beauties of the world, desire onely to enioy that of his sonnes wife! how he that hath scarce any time left him to be repentant and sorrowfull for his old sinnes, will now anew make himselfe guilty of these soule sins of adultery, and I may in a maner say,

of Incest ! how he that hath not giuen the flower of his youth, will yet, still lasciuiously and wilfully refuse to bestow the branno of his age on his God ! Alas miserable *Castelnoue*, wretched old man, or rather lubritious and beastly Leacher, thus to drowne thy thoughts in the hell of concupiscence and adultery , when it were far fitter thou shouldest lift them vp to heauen, in the sacrifice of prayer, & other pious and religious contemplations ! But all this will not preuaile to stop the current of his voluptuousnesse , and the progression of his sensuality : for without respect of his God, or regard of his soule, he is resolute in his desires to make a strumpet of his daughter in law, and to make his sonnes wife his whore : but God will deceiue his hopes and preuent his villany .

Now the better, and sooner to draw her to his lasciuious desires, he is wonderfull courteous and affable to her, still walking and talking with her, yea, and many times kissing her , whereof both her husband and selfe are infinitely ioyfull , but especially *Perina*, because she findes a great alteration in her fortune, in that her father in law *Castelnoue* proues as courteous to her, as her owne father *Arconeto* is cruell. But, poore innocent soule , and sweet and chaste Lady, little doest thou either dreame , or thinke on his lasciuious intent against thine honour and chastity. Old *Castelnoue* wallowing in the filthinesse, and burning in the fire of his new lust, and losing himselfe and his thoughts in the *Labyrinth* of his daughter in law *Perina*'s beauty, he thinkes on nothing so much, nay, on nothing else, but how to obtaine her to his lasciuious will: but not daring , or rather fearing to ac-

quaint

quaint her with his inordinate and beastly purpose, whiles his sonne her husband is at home present with her: Hee forgeth and frames a plot, both vnnaturall and treacherous, to make him imbrace and follow the warres, in wayting on the Duke Charles Emanuel, or the Prince Amadee Victor his sonne and heire, who with their warlike troopes, were resolute to expell the Duke of Feria, Viceroy of Millan, with his Spanish regiments out of Verceilie Cassall, and the other townes of Piedmont, to which end his lustfull affection to Perina made him eloquent in perswading, and powerfull in drawing her husband to this Martiall action, so full of honour and glory, adding that his honour, and the seruice of his Prince and Country, called him to the field, and that hee should not wholly drowne himselfe in the beauty of his young wife, and the pleasures of marriage. His sonne Castelnou not at all suspecting, or dreaming what a dangerous Snake lay lurking vnder the greene leaues of his fathers fudgered speeches and perswasions, like a noble and generous Knight as he was, needs no other aduocate but his owne honour & Martiall disposition to imbarke him in these wars: and although the beautie, requests, and teares of his young Lady were vehement sollicitors to diuert him, yet he is resolute to leaue her for three or foure moneths: and so making ready his armes, traine, horses and preparatiues, he giuing her many kisses, and shee returning him a world of sighes and teares, leaues Nice, and so findes out the Duke and his Army in Piedmont, where for a little time we will leaue him.

It is a question very disputable, and which my

weake capacity and iudgement cannot decide, whether this departure of young *Castelnoo* to the warres, made his father more glad, or his wife sorrowfull: for as she was all in teares, so was he in mirth and iel-  
lity, being so vaine in his lust, and so lustfull in his vanity, as he trimmes vp his beard, and goes nea-  
ter, and withall more youthfull in his apparell then accustomed, yeah his lust had so metamorphosed him,  
as if it had a prophane influence, and secret power  
to renew old age in him. But alas, alas, what per-  
fection of chastity can wee expect or hope for in  
youth, when we see no better signes and fruits in one  
of threescore and eight yeeres? But I will follow the  
stremme of our History, though indeed the relation  
of this old lasciuious Lechers Lust and Vanity to his  
daughter in law *Perina*, equally afflict me with grieve  
and pitty to publish it.

I am then constrained to write and auerre, that al-  
though meere shame and vnnaturalnesse doe as yet  
with-hold this wretched fathers tongue, from vomit-  
ting foorth his adulterated lust to his faire and  
chaste daughter in law *Perina*; yet his lust is so im-  
modestly lasciuious, as he cannot keepe himselfe out  
of her company, nor being in it, refraine from kissing  
her: but to see the innocency, and obserue the purity  
of her thoughts, she neuerthelesse not so much as any  
way suspectes or dreames of his lasciuious intent, al-  
though indeed, she thinkes this courtisie of his some-  
what exceed the priuiledge of a father, and the dutie  
of a daughter: but measuring this by the cruelty of  
her owne father, she poore silly soule, thinkes her  
selfe in this respect now as happy, as heretofore she  
was

was miserable. Onely the absence of her deare husband *Castelnuovo* doth both tortture and torment her, and the more, for that he is in the field at warres, when God knoweth she desireth and wisheth he should bee at home with her in peace.

But whiles *Perina* lookes from *Savoy* to *Piedmont*; from *Nice*, to *Vercelli*; and from her selfe to her lord and husband, her other selfe: we must not forget, because our History will remember her mother in law *Fidelia*, which now wee must admit and re-conduct to act her part vpon the Theatre hereof, who obseruing her husbands immodest and vnwise familiarity demonstrated to the young *Lady Perina* her sonnes wife, as also his alteration in humours and apparell; but chiefly his vnaeccustomed distraction and sighes in his rest and repose. Shee, more out of vertuous wisdome, then foolish ialousie, aimes at his vaine lust towards this young *Lady* her daughter in law, whereat she both admires with griefe, and wonders with the anxiety of affliction and sorrow, to see her old husband in the winter of his age, so fottish and beastly to lust after his owne sonnes young wife, to see that no respect of *Heaven*, no regard of conscience, nor apprehension of damnation and hell, had the grace or power either to kil these lasciuious thoughts in their concepcion, or to strangle them in their birth, to see that hee who was ready to goe to his bed of death, should now (like the *Salamander* in the fire) bee burning with desire, to goe to that of Lust and Adultery, and to see him so deuoyde of pitty, as hee must needs ioyne Incest with Adultery, as if one of these beastly sinnes alone were not enough enormous

and prodigious to make his life miserable , and his death wretched : and although shee haue cause enough of sorrow in her selfe, yet, when she thinkes of her husbands age, and daughters youth ; of his lust, and her chastity ; and which is more, of the most degenerate and vnnaturall part of a father , to seekē to pollute and defile his owne sonnes bed , and consequently his honour : this indeed goes neere her , and this and onely this makes her looke on him , both with enuie and pittie : but her age hauing taught her to loue discretion, and to hate and disdaine ialousy, she beares this as patiently as she may : till at last seeking and finding out a fit opportunity, she both with teares in her eyes, and griefe in her speeches, very secretly checks him for these his inordinate and lasciuious desires towards the young *Lady Perina* their daughter in law .

But as it is the nature of sinne so to betray and inueigle our iudgements, that we flatter our selves with a false conceit none can perceiue it in vs : so this old *Lecher* her husband, thinking that he had danced in a net, from the ialousie and suspition of all the world, in thus affecting his sonnes wife; hee like a lewd and wretched old varlet, is so farre from relishing these his old wiues speeches and exhortations, or from being reclaimed therby, as he disdaines both them and her, and from henceforth is so imperious , and withall bitter to her, as he neuer lookes on her with affection, but enuie : which neuerthelesse she (as a modest wife, and graue matrone) holds it a part not onely of her loue, but of her duty, by sweet speeches, and soft means of perswasion, to diuert him from this fond and lasciuious.

uious humour of his. But obserue the vanity of his lasciuiousnesse, and the impiety of his thoughts and resolutions : for all her prayers and perswasions serue onely rather to set, then rebate the edge of his lust, and rather bring oyle to increase, then water to quench the flame of his immodest and irregular affection, so as seeing that shee stood in the way of obtaining his beastly pleasures ; he, like a prophane and barbarous husband, tearmes her no more his wife, but his *Medea* ; and which is worse, hee out of the heat both of his lust and choller, vowes he will soone remoue her from this world to another.

And here the djiuell, ambitious and desirous of nothing so much, as to fill vp the empty roomes of his vast and infernall kingdome, by miserable and execrable degrees, takes possession first of his thoughts, then of his heart, and lastly of his soule : so as being constant in his indignation and choller, and resolute in this his impious and bloody reuenge, hee meanes to dispatch and murther her, who for the tearme of forty two yeeres, had been his most loving wife, and faithfull bed-fellow : but withall he will act it so priuately, as not hauing as yet discouered his affection to his daughter *Perina*, hee will therefore conceale both from her and all the world, the murther of this his wife *Fidelia*, except onely to those gracelesse and execrable *Agensi* he meant employ in this mournfull and bloody busynesse.

To which end (with a hellish ratiocination) ruminating and revoluing on the manner thereof, hee having run ouer the circumstances of many violent and tragical deaths, at last resolues to poyon her ; and

deemes none so fit to vndertake it, as her owne wayting Gentlewoman Iterashu; the which authorized by his former lasciuious dalliance with her, as also in fauour of fiftie hundred Ducats, that hee will giue her, he is confident she will vndertake and finish: neither doth he faile in his bloody hopes. For what with the honey of his flattering speeches, and the sugar of his gold, shee, like an infernall fury, and a very monstre of her sexe, most ingratefully and inhumanely consents therunto: so as putting poyson into white broth, which somme mornings shee was accustomed to make and giue her *Lady*, it spreading into her veines, and exhaling the radicall humour of her life and strength, within eight dayes carries this aged and vertuous Matron to her graue, and her soule to heauen. But her murtherers shall pay deare for this her vntimely end.

The *Lady Perina*, and all the *Lady Fidelia's* kinsfolks and friends infinitely lament and bewaile her death: and indeed so doth the whole *City of Nice*, where for her descent and verties shee is infinitely beloved and affected: but all these teares of theirs are nothing in comparison of those of her wicked and execrable husband *Castelnoo*: who, although he inwardly rejoyce, yet he outwardly seemes to bee exceedingly affilied and dejected. But as he hath heretofore acted the part of a murtherer, and now of an hypocrite, yet haue we but a little patience, and we shall see that detected, this vnmasked, and both punished.

Whiles this mournfull Tragedy is acted in *Nice*, the mediation of the *French King* and *Pope* reconcile the differences, giue end to the warres, and conclude peace betwixt *Spaine* and *Smoy*. So home returns the

Duke

Duke of Feria, to Millan; the noble Duke of Sauoy, and the generous Princes his sonnes, to Thrin; the Marshall de Desdiguieres, and the Baron of Termes into France; and consequently home comes our Knight Castelnou to Nice; where thinking to reioyce with his young wife, he is so vnfourtunat, to mourne for the death of his old mother: but God knowes, that neither of them know the least sparc or shadow of her cruell and vntimely murther, and lesse, the cause therof. Now for his lasciuious and bloody father: albeit, to cast a veile before his thoughts, and his intents and actions, he publikely mournes for his wifes death, and reioyceþ for his sonnes returne; yet contrariwise hee priuately mournes for this, and reioyceþ for that. But to leauie the remembrance of Fidelia, to assume that of our Perina, I know not whether shee grieued more at her husbands absence, or reioyce at his presence, sith her affection to him was so tender and seruent, as in her heart and soule, she esteemed that as much her hell, as this her Heaven vpon Earth: but these joyes of hers are but fires of straw, or flattering Sun-shines, which are suddenly either washed away with a shower, or eclipsed and banished by a tempest: for whiles her hopes flatter her beliefe of her husbands continual stay and residence with her, her father in lawes lust to her, fore-seeing and considering, that it was impossible to thinke to obtaine her at home, e're her husband his sonne were againe employed and sent abroad, makes all his thoughts aime, and care and industry tend that way, as if time had no power to make him repente the former murther of his wife, or Grace influence to renounce the future defiling

defiling and dishonouring of his daughter in law.

But he is as constant in his lust to her, as resolute in his dispatching and sending away of him; onely hee must finde out some pregnant, vertuous and honourable pretext and colour, for the effecting of his designe and resolution: because he well knowes his sonne *Castelnovo* is as wise and generous in himselfe, as amorous of his beautifull young *Lady Perina*: but his lust, which is the cause of his resolution, or rather his vanity, which is the authour of his lust, at one time suggets him these two seueral imployments for his sonne, either to send him into *France* with the *Prince Maior*, who was lately contracted, and shortly to espouse *Madame Christiene* the *Kings* second sister, or else vnder the insinuation of some great pensions and offices that were shortly to be disposed of in *Malta*, againe to send him backe thither: and his harping on these two strings, was the onely musicke and melody which he now gaue his sonne; who after he had a moneth or two at most, recreateth himselfe in the sweet company of his deare and sweet wife *Perina*, hee least of all aiming whereat his father aimed, by his absence againe giues way, and consents to his desires of his departure: onely the choyce of these two different imployments is yet questionable & vnresolued of twixt the father and the sonne. For as the sonnes curiositie desireth to see the *Court* of *France*, which as yet hee hath not seen: so his fathers lust and malice is to haue him returne honourably to *Malta*, from whence hee hath formerly received his honour of Knighthood, and there to obtaine a Pension during the terme of his life. The sonne embraceth the pleasures of the iourney

ney of *France*, before the profit and honour of the voyage of *Malta*. But the father aiming at other ends, preferres this of *Malta*, before that of *France*; so as time working an impression in his thoughts, and his fathers desire a kind of naturall command in his will, and of filiall obedience in his resolution, hee at last resolues on *Malta*. But as neither of these two enterprizes of young *Castelnou* is pleasing, but distastfull to his young and faire Lady *Perina*: So if her affliction and misery be such, as of the two her husband must needs attempt and prosecute one: then sith hee may goe into *France* by land, and cannot to *Malta*, but by sea: she at last, with an inforced willingnesse (sympathizing with his first inclination) likewise desireth that the obiect of his iourney, and the period of his voyadge be *France*, and not *Malta*; as relying rather in hearing from him to stand at the speed and fidelity of a Poast, then at the inconstancy of the winds, and the mercy of the seas. So all things prepared and ready for his voyadge, *Perina* importunely begging, and her husband *Castelnou* confidently promising his speedy returne; she conducting him ouer the Hill to *Villafanca* in her Coach, they there, with many reciprocall kisses, sighes and teares, take leaue each of other, hee imbarking himselfe vpon a *French Galley*, bound from *Marseilles* to *Malta*, (which stopt there accidentally:) and she committing him to the auspicious fauour of the winde and sea, very sorrowfully returns for *Nice*.

Thus leauing the sonne floting and wafting on the seas, let vs againe returne to his vnnaturall and beastly father, who seeing his wife gone to *Heauen*, and his sonne to *Malta*, and all things hitherto to succeed

according to his lasciuious desires, doth now assure himselfe, that either by faire or soule meane he will reapre his pleasure of his beautifull daughter in law *Perina*. To which end hee giues her the sole gouernment and superintendance of his house, with intent and hope the sooner to gouerne, and surer to command her: and so forgetting modesty, and his lust giuing a law to his conscience; fifteene dayes are scarce past, till finding her alone in her chamber playing on her Lute, he, after some pauses, coughes, and kisses, bewrayes and vomiteth her foorth his fervent affection and desire.

But for mine owne part, I highly disdaine to pollute and vilifie this *History*, with the obscene and lasciuious speeches, wherewith this old *Lecher Castelvono* courts this young Lady *Perina* his daughter in law, as holding them as vnworthy of my relation, as of my Readers knowledge; of my modest pen, as of their chaste eares, onely iudging of their nature and quality, by their effects. The beastlinesse and vnxpectednesse thereof, first made *Perina* extremely blush for shame and choller, and then immediately againe looke pale with griefe and disdaine; when not able to brooke, or hearken to his lewd speeches, much lesse his hatefull presence; she, in the defence and preseruation of her chastity, which shew preferred before her life, giuing him a sharpe answere, and a bitter denial, and grieuing to see a father so gracelesse and impious, to seeke to defile his owne sonnes bed in her dishonour, she throwes away her Lute; and so very hastily and chollerickly abandoneth his presence, and her owne chamber. At which he bites his lip for rage, and hangs downe his head

head for indignation. But at last, sinne and the diuell  
raigning in him, makes that he will not take this her  
first repulse for his last answere and deniall: but reso-  
lute to perseuere in his lubricity, hee in euery walke,  
garden and roome, frequents and haunts her as her  
ghost, as thinking to obtaine that from her through his  
importunity, which hee could not by his perswasion:  
but this his impudency shall not preuale.

Now as his sinfull motion infinitely grieued her, so  
his perseuerance and importunacy therein doth dou-  
bly afflict and torment her: how to appease this  
storme, to quench the fire of his lust, and deface the  
remembrance and feeling of her griefe, shee knowes not.  
For alas, alas, she is so vnhappy, as her owne father *Ar-  
coneto*, and her Aunt *Dominica* are at S. *John de Mau-  
riene*, her sweet and deare husband in *Malta*, and her  
mother in law, the *Lady Fidelia* in heauen; so as shee  
hath no intimate nor secret familiars, nor any bosome  
friend to reueale these her sorrowes and afflictions.  
Once she thought to steale away from *Nice*, so to passe  
the Mountaines, and to flie backe to S. *John de Mau-  
riene*: but againe considering the dishonour, and  
withall, the danger to vndertake this iourney, as also  
the cold reception and entertainment shee should  
there finde of her owne hard-hearted father, who  
would rather deride then pity her afflictions: she altereth  
this her resolution, and so resolues a little lon-  
ger to stay in *Nice*, hoping & praying, that God would  
rectifie her father in law *Castelnouo*'s judgement, and  
reforme the errours of his lasciuious thoughts and  
desires. And so for her part, hating the father as much  
as she loued the sonne her husband, hee could not bee

more prodigall of his lewd speeches and tentations to her, then shee was of her sighes & teares to vnderstand and repell them. A thousand times shee wisheth her selfe in *Malta*, with the Knight her husband, or hee in *Nice* with her: and could her body so soone have flowne or sailed thither as her thoughts, he had long since enjoyed the happinesse of her presence, and she the felicity of his fathers absence. But sith shee is too miserable to be so fortunate, she hath yet this consolation left her to sweeten the bitterness of her afflictions, and this hope to reviuue and comfort her against her despaire, that her Letter may procure his speedy returne from *Malta* to *Nice*. Whereon resoluing, although the occasion and grounds thereof were as strange as shamefull, shee secretly steales to her chamber, and locking her doore to her, takes her pen and paper, and rather with teares then Ink, writes him these few lines:

**A**lthough mine eyes and heart can better weepe and sigh forth mine afflictions, then my pen depaint them, yet should infinitely wrong thee in my selfe, and my selfe in thee, if I informe thee not by this my Letter (the secret Ambassador of my heart) that my affection deserves, and mine honour requires thy speedy returne to me, I would unlock thee this mystery, and make it more obnious and apparent to the eye of thine understanding, but that mine owne modesty, and another's shame commands my pen to silence herein. And againe, my teares so confusedly & mournfully interrupt my sighes, they my teares, & both my pen, as although I haue the will, yet I want the power to enlarge theo. Only my deare Castelnouo, if euer thy Perina were dear to thee, make her happy with thy sight, who deems her selfe not only miserable, but accursed in thy absence. For till *Nice* be thy *Malta*, Heauē may, Earth cannot reioyce me.

PERINA.

Hauing written this her letter, she findes a confi-  
dent and intimate friend of her husbands a Gentleman,  
named Seignior Benedetto Sabia, who vndertakes the  
safe conueyance, and secret deliuery thereof in *Malta*  
to *Castelnou*: so giuing it him with store of gold, to  
defray the charge of his iourney, as also a paire of  
gold bracelets for a token to her Knight and husband,  
he imbarques for *Genoua*, so to *Naples*, & from thence  
in a *Neopolitan* Galley, arriues in short time, to the  
renowned and famous *ile of Malta*, the inexpugna-  
ble Bulwarke of *Christendome*, and the curbe and bri-  
dle of audacious insulting *Turky*, where finding out  
the Knight, Seignior Francisco de *Castelnou*, he effectu-  
ally and fairely deliuers him his Ladies letter, brace-  
lets and message, who withdrawing himselfe to a  
window, hath no sooner broken vp the seales, and read  
the letter, but he is at first much perplexed at the un-  
expected newes thereof: he reads it o're againe and  
againe, and findes it so obscure, as hee cannot gather  
or conceiue her meaning therein: but at last constru-  
ing it onely to be a wile and fetch of her affection, to  
re-fetch and call him home to *Nice* to her: he loth  
as yet to lose and abandon his hopes of preferment  
in that *land*, which now the *Great Master* hath pro-  
mised him, dispatcheth *Sabia* backe for *Nice*, and  
plucking off a rich *Emerauld* from his finger, deliuers  
it him for his Lady *Perina*, as a token of his deare  
and feruent affection, and with it a Letter in answe-  
of shers.

In the Interim of *Sabia* his absence to *Malta*, our  
old lasciuious Baron *Castelnou* is not idle in *Nice*, in  
still seeking to draw our Lady *Perina* to his adul-

terous desire, and will, yea, he is become so obscene in his requests and speeches, as they not onely exceed chastity, but ciuility: so as she (poore Lady) can finde no truce, nor obtaine any intermission from these his beastly sollicitations, but resoluing still to preserue her honour with her life; her pure chastity shines clearer in the middest of these his impure temptations, then the Sunne doth, being enuironed and incompassed with many obscure clouds: but shee thinkes every hour, a yeere, before shee see her Knight Castelnou safely returned from Malta, when lo, Sabia arriving at Villafranca, trips ouer to Nice, and vnderstanding Perina priuately bolted vp in her Chamber, her paires to her, and there deliuers her, her Knight Castelnou's Ring and Letter, although not himselfe; when tearing off the Seales, she therein findes these words:

**M**Y faire and deare Perina, the knowledge of thy sighes and teares the more afflit and grieue me, in respect I am ignorant whence they proceed, or what occaisioneth them: 'tis true, thy affection deserues my returne, and the preseruation of thine honour, not onely to request, but to require and command it: but I am so assured of that, and so confident of this, as I know thou wils carry the first to by graue, and the second to heaven: So, if any one since my departure haue falne in loue with thy beauty, thou must not finde it strange, much lesse grieue thereat, sith the excellency thereof hath power, not onely to captiuate one, but many: yea, the consideration thereof should rather reioyce, then afflict thee, sith whatsoever bee be, the shame in the end will remaine his, and the thine. But Deare and Sweet

Sweet Lady, I thinke thine honour is onely the pretext, and thy affection the cause, so earnestly to desire my returne: whereunto I would willingly consent, but that the daily expectation of my preferment, must a little longer detaine mee heere: onely this is my resolution, and I pray let it be thy assurance, I will dispatch my affaires here with all possible expedition, and shall neuer thinke my selfe happy, till I re-imbarke from Malta, and land at Nice.

## CASTELNOVO.

Having o're-read her Letter, she, the better to dissemble her secret passions and grieves, very courteously conferses with Sabia: of whom hauing for that time thankfully taken her leaue, she for meere sorrow and affliction, throwes her selfe on her bed, from thence on the floore, to see her hopes deceiu'd of her husbands returne; and now shee knowes neither what to say or doe in this her misery and perplexity: for she sees that her father in lawes obstinacy, and consequently her sorrowes, grow from bad to worse, that he is so farre from reclayming, as he is resolute in his lasciuious and beastly sollicitations: So that seeing his faire speeches and entreaties cannot preuaile with her, hee exchangeth his resolution and former language, and so addes threats to his requests, and frownes to his smiles, as if force should extort and obtaine that, which faire means could not, yea, and sometimes hee enterningleth and administreth her such heart-killing menaces, as she hath now reason, not onely to doubt of his lust, but also to feare his revenge: which considering, she, as well to preserue her honour, as to prouide for the safety of her life, will  
once

once againe proue the kindnesse of her owne vnkinde father *Arconeto*, and so determineth to leauie *Nice*, and to flie vnto *Saint John de Mauriene*: now to assit and accompany her in this her secret escape , shee thinkes none so fit as *Sabia*, who for her husbands affection, and her owne vertues , willingly consenteth to her: so she preparing her apparell, and he her traine, they in a darke night ( when pale-faced *Cynthia* inuenloped herselfe in a multitude of blacke and obscure clouds, purposely to assit and fauour her in this her laudable and honourable flight ) take horse, and so with great expedition passe the mountaines, and recouer *Saint John de Mauriene*; where though she be not truely welcome to her owne father *Arconeto*: yet her honour and her life are truly secured from the lust and reuenge of her lasciuious father in law *Castelnoo*: neuerthelesse the cause and manner of her escape, but chiefly the consideration of her husbands absence in the passage of this busynesse , doth still so bitterly afflic her, as she is become pale and sickly : whereupon she is resolute , once againe to send backe *Sabia* to *Malta* to her Knight and husband, with a second Letter, in hope it may effect and procure his retурne, which her first could not : and so calling for pen and paper, she traceth thereon these few lines :

**S**ith thou wilt not leauie *Malta*, to see *Nice* for my sake,  
I haue left *Nice*, to liue, or rather to die in *Saint John de Mauriene* for thine : 'tis true, my affection hath desired thy retурne, which thou hast not graunted me : 'tis as true, that one, to whom Nature hath giuen a prime and singular interest in thee, and thee in him, hath sought the defloration

sion of mine honour, which my heart and dutie haue denied him: thou art confident of my affection to thee: if thine had beeene so faithfull and fervent to my selfe, neither sea nor land had had power to separate vs: if any preferment be dearer to thee then my life, stay in Malta: or if my life be dearer then it, then returne to Saint Iohn de Mauriene, where thou mayest finde me, for in Nice I will not be found of thee: hadst thou not purposely mistaken the cause for the pretext in my importunity of thy returne, I would haue digested it with farre more content, and leesse affliction: but sith neither my affection, or honour hath power to effect it, at least let the regard of my life, sith that will not accompany me, if thou any longer absent thy selfe from mee: make therefore haste to see thy Perina, if ever thou thinke to see her againe; and let her beare this one content to her graue, that shee may disclose thee a secret, which, but to thy selfe, shee will conceale from all the world.

## PERINA.

Whiles *Sabia* is againe speeding toward *Malta*, with *Perina's* second Letter to her husband *Castelnouo*, we will a little speake of old *Castelnouo* the fater, who seeing his daughter in law *Perina* fled, and consequently his hopes with her, he is extremely perplexed and afflicted hereat: All the house and City is sought for her, and hec himselfe breakes off the locks of her Chamber-doore, where he findes the nest, but the bird flowne away, her bed, but not her selfe: so as his thoughts doubly torment & astonish him, first to be frustrated of his hopes & desires to enjoy her, then, because shee will bewray his lasciuious suite and affection

fection to her husband his sonne, which of all sides will procure him not onely shame, but infamy : yea, now it is, although before he would not, that he sees his error, and vanity, in attempting to make shipwrack of her honour and chastity, which is the *Glory*, and should be the *Palladium* of Ladies : but it is too late to recoverher againe : and therefore although he know how to repent, yet, he is ignorant how to remedy or redeeme it, sith his attempt and enterprize was not onely odious to *God*, but infamous to men; opposite to *Grace*, and repugnant and contradictory to *Nature* : besides, this his lustfull folly proceeding from himselfe, lookes two waies, and hath a double reflection, first, on *Perima* the wife, then on *Castelnou* her husband and his owne sonne, who, he is assured will be all fire hereat ; yea, this crime of his is of so high and so beastly a nature, as he knowes not what to say to him, or how to looke him in the face when he shall arriue from *Malta*, which his guilty conscience tels him will be shortly, neither doth the Calculation or Arithmetike of his feare deceiue him : for by this time is *Sabia* againe arriued at *Malta*, where he deliuers *Castelnou* his wifes second letter : the which doth so nettle and sting his heart to the quick, at the bitter and vnxpected newes it relates, as he esteemes himselfe no longer himselfe, because he is not with his deare wife, who is the one halfe, yea, the greatest part of himselfe : wherefore, admiring who in *Nice*, yea, in his fathers house should bee so impudently lasciuious, to seeke to blemish his honour, in that of his Ladies; he, making her sighes and teares his, with all expedition and haste, prouides for his departure from

from *Malta*, and yet his loue, his feare, or both conducing and concurring in one, makes him instantly resolute to dispatch and returne *Sabia*, as the harbinger to proclaime his comming : the which he doth, and chargeth him with this letter to his faire wife, and deare Lady *Perina*.

**T**hy sudden departure from *Nice*, to *Saint John de Mauriene*, doth equally afflitt and amaze me : I burne with desire, to know as well the Author, as the cause thereof, that I may likewise know how to right thee in reuenging my selfe of him. I haue thought it fit to returne *Signior Sabia* againe to thee, as soone as he arriued to me, being ready within two daies to imbarke as timely as himselfe : so that if winde and sea hate me not too much, in more louing and fauouring him, I am confident to bring and deliver thee my selfe, as soone as he shall thee, this my Letter : and iudge whether I speake it from my heart and soule, sith the estimation of thy loue, and the preseruation of thine honour make me already deeme minutes, moneths, and houres, yeeres ; till my presence be made happy with thine. I come, faire *Perina*, sweet wife and deare Lady, I come : and if *Heauen* proue propitious to my most religious prayers, and desires here on earth, our meeting shall be shortly as sweet and happy, as our parting was bitter and sorrowfull.

#### CASTELNOVO.

So according to this his Letter, as first *Sabia* imbarke from *Malta* to *Nice*, before him, so he likewise arriues at *Genoua*, the day after hee did at *Nice*, from whence poasting o're the mountaines, hee arriues at *Saint John de Mauriene*, where, at his father in law *Ar-*

aconeto's house, he findes his deare & sweet *Lady Perina*, who euery minute of time, with much impatient longing & desire, expected his arriuall(as hauing the night before receiued his second and last letter by *Sabia* which aduertised her thereof) so like true and faithfull Turtle dous, esteeming each others presence their most soueraigne felicity, they fall to their billing and kisses, to informe themselues, how sweet this their happy meeting was each too other. And here our Knight *Castelnouo* cannot be so curious or hastie to enquire, as his *Lady Perina* was to relate the cause of her sudden departure from *Nice* to *Saint John de Mauriene*, occasioned by the vnnaturall lust & lasciuiousnesse of his father(as we haue formerly vnderstood) the which with many sighs and teares, she depaints forth to him in all its circumstances and colours. He is amazed at this strange and vnxpected newes, and farre the more to thinke, that his own father should (in the winter of his age) attempt or seeke to defile his honor & bed, in the person of this his faire and chast *Lady Perina*: he wondereth to see so little Grace in so many yeeres, & that if Nature had not, yet Religion should haue had power to banish these lasciuious thoughts from his heart and memory: so with out-spred arms, he tenderly embraceth & kisseth her, highly extolling her chastity, & applauing the discreet carriage of her escape: being himselfe resolute to stay in *S. John de Mauriene*, with her father *Aconeto*, & not to returne to *Nice*, to his owne father *Castelnouo*: but he shall as soone infringe, as make this his resolution: for by this time, his father vnderstanding of his sons returne from *Malta*, to *S. John de Mauriene*, and knowing that his *Lady Perina* had not fail'd to be-

wray

wray him his lasciuious suit & desire atēpted against her honour, as also grieuing at the remembrance of his former folly and future shame, in knowing what a soule scandall both it and his sonnes absence would procure and ingender him, he resolues to confess his crime, and so by the mediation of a perswasive and satisfying Letter, to indeuour to reelaime them againe from S<sup>r</sup>. John de Mauriene to Nice, when calling for pen and paper, he writes these few insuing lines, and sends them his sonne by a Gentleman of his:

I am as glad of thy arriall from Malta, as sorrowfull for thy absence from Nice: and sith to deny, is to redouble our errours and imperfektions, I will not go further then my selfe to find the cause thereof, sith I know, that my lasciuious and gracelesse attempt against the honour of thy chaste Lady, hath drawne thee to this resolution: but now I write it to my future comfort, as much as I conceiued it to my former shame; that Grace hath vanquished Nature; and Religion, lust in me: so as I am at present not only sorrowfull, but repentant for that crime of mine, which I will no more remember but with horrour, nor thinke of, but with detestation. My soule hath made my peace with God, and my heart desires to recontract it both with thy selfe and her: and as I hope he will forget it, so I beseech you both to forgive it me, being ready to confirme this my reconciliation, as well with my tongue, as pen. Wherefore sith thou art the sole prop of my age, and comfort of my life; make me not so unfortunate or miserable, to be taxt with the scandall of my shame, and thy absence: but bring backe thy Lady with thee: For heare I profess before heauen and earth, that I will henceforth as much honor her for her chastity, as heretofore I lasciuiously sought to betray and violate it.

C A S T E L N O V O.

This vertuous and religious Letter of the father  
preuailes with the sonne, and his faire and chaste *Lady* ;  
so as their secrerries and discretion hush vp this busines  
in silence, and within eight dayes they both returme  
from Saint *John de Mauriene*, to *Nice* : where they are  
courteously welcomed, and respectiuely received and  
entertained of their father, whose contrition for his  
former folly is outwardly so great, as he hath teares in  
his eyes at the remembrance thereof: so as making  
good the promise of his Letter, he very penitently and  
sorrowfully implores their pardon and remission,  
which they instantly grant him, with as much willing-  
nesse as alacrity. So the report and thought hereof is  
obscured, and vanished, as if it had neuer been; and  
all things and parties so reconciled, as to common  
sense nothing in the world is capable to trouble the  
tranquillity of this reconciliation and atonement. But  
alas, alas, we shall very briefly see the contrary: For old  
*Castelnoou* y father, notwithstanding all these religious  
promises, and sincere shewes of repentance and teares,  
is so farre from being the man he seemes to bee, as al-  
though he haue made his peace with his sonne and  
daughter, yet ay me, I write it with griefe, he hath not  
with his conscience, nor his conscience with *God*: for  
although he haue a chaste and religious tongue, yet  
he still retaineth a lasciuious and adulterate heart: yea,  
he is so farre from conuersion and reformation, as the  
new sight and review of the *Lady Perina*'s fresh and  
delicate beauty doth reuiue those sparkes, and to refresh  
those flames of his lust, which seemed to bee raked vp  
in the embers of her absence. And what is this, but to  
be a *Christian* in shew, and a miscreant in effect? to hide  
a foule

a soule soule vnder a faire face ? and to make Religion and hypocrisie, a fatall and miserable cloke for his vilany? But though he dissemble with God, yet wee shall see, and hee finde, that God will not dissemble with him ; and in thinking to betray God, Satan in the end will betray him. The manner is thus :

As he resumeshis old suit, and newly burns in loue and lustful desire, to erect the trophies of his lasciuious & incestuous pleasures, vpon the ruines of his daughter in lawes chastity and honour ; so hee likewise fees it impossible, to thinke to performe, or hope to accomplish it, as long as his sonne her husband liues ; and therefore losing his iudgement either in the Labyrinth of her beauty, or in the turbulent Ocean of his owne concupiscence and lust ; hee, contrary to the rules of Grace, and the lawes and principles of Nature, swappes abargaine with the diuell to poysen him. To which end, to shew himselfe the monster of men, and the bloodyest president of a most degenerate father, which this, or many precedent ages euer produced or affoorded; he hath againe recourse to his hellish Agent *Ieranha*, in fauour of fие hundred Ducats, to send the sonne into Heauen after the mother, and to make him equall with her, as in nature, so in (the dissolution therof) death : a bloody designe, and mourfull project, which we shall presently be inforced to see acted vpon the Theater of this History. But *Ieranha* is at first so repentant for the death of the mother, as she will not consent to that of the sonne. And had she continued in this religious resolution, she had liued more fortunately, and not dyed so miserably and shamefully, as we shall briefly see. For our old Lecher Castelnou, her Master,

Master, seeing his gold could not this second time preuaile with *Ierantba*, being equally inflamed as well with lust to *Perina*, as with malice and reuenge to his sonne *Castelnoue* her husband: hee is so implacable therein, as hee promiseth to marry her, if shee will attempt and performe it. So although his first battery failed, yet his second doth not. For the diuell had made her so ambitious of Greatnesse and honour, that of a simple waiting *Gentlewoman*, to become a great *Lady*, shee consents heereunto: and which is a thousand pities to report, within lesse then six dayes performs it; when (*God knowes*) the innocency of this harmelesse young *Gentleman* his sonne never dreamt or suspected it.

At the sight of this his sudden death, his *Lady Perina* is ready to dye for grieve; yea to drowne her selfe in the *Ocean* and deluge of her teares; tearing her haire, and striuing to deface the excellency of her beauty, with a kind of carelesse neglect, as if she were resolute not to suruiue him. And if the *Lady Perina* bewrayed many deplorable demonstrations of sorrow for the death of her husband, no lesse doth his father *Castelnoue* for that of his sonne; only their griges (conformable to their passions) are diametrically different and opposite: for hers were fervent and true, as proceeding from the sincerity of her affection; and his hypocritical and faigned, as derived from the profundity of his malice and reuenge towards him. And not to transgresse from the *Decorum* and truth of our *History*, old *Castelnous* could not so artificially beare and ouer-vaile his sorrowes for his sonnes death, but (the premisses considered) our young afflicted widow and *Lady*

Lady vehemently suspecteth hee hath a hand therein; and likewise partly belieues that *Ierantha* is likewise accessary and ingaged therein, in respect shee looks more aloft, and is growne more familiar with her *Lord* and Master then before. And indeed as her sorrowes increase her ielousie, so her ielousie throwes her into a passionate and violent resolution of reuenge, both against him and her, if shee can bee furetely assured that they had murthered and poysoned the Knight her husband.

Now to be assured hereof, she thus reasoneth with her selfe, that if her father-in-law were the murtherer of his sonne her husband, his malice and hatred to him proceeded from his beastly lust to her selfe; and that he now dispatched, hee would againe shortly revue and renew his old lasciuious suit to her: which if he did, she vowed to take a sharpe and cruell reuenge of him, which she will limit with no lesse then his death. And indeed wee shall not goe farre to see the event and truth answere her suspition. For within a moneth or two after her husband was laid in his vntimely graue, his old lustfull and lasciuious father doth againe burst and vomit forth his beastly sollicitations against her chastity and honour: which obseruing, she somewhat disdainfully and cooly puts him off, but yet not so passionately nor chollerickly as before, only of purpose to make him the more eager in his pursuite, thereby the better to draw him to her lure, that shee might perpetrate her malice, and act her reuenge on him, and so make his death the object of her rage and indignation, as his lust and malice were the cause of the sorrowes of her life. But vnfortunate and miserable

Lady, what a bloody and hellish enterprize dost thou ingage thy selfe in, and why hath thy affection so blinded thy conscience and soule, to make thy selfe the author and actor of so mournfull and bloody a Tragedy? For alas, alas, sweet *Perina*, I know not whether more to commend thy affection to thy husband, or condernme thy cruell malice intended to his father. For O grieve, O pity! where are thy vertues, where is thy Religion, where thy conscience, thy soule, thy God, thus to give thy selfe ouer to the hellish tentations of Satan? Thou which heretofore fleddest from adultery, wilt thou now follow murther? or because thy heart would not bee accessary to that, shall thy soule be now so irreligious and impious, to bee guilty of this? But as her father in law is resolute in his lust towards her, so is she likewise in her reuenge towards him, and farre the more, in that she perceiues *Lecher*'s great belly sufficiently proclames, that she hath plaid the strumpet; and which is worse, she feares, with her execrable and wretched father in law: so as now no longer able to stop the furious and impetuous current of her reuenge, she is so gracelesse and bloody, as she vowes, first, to dispatch the Lord and Master, then, the waiting *Gentlemen*: as her thoughts and soule suggest her they had done first the mother, then, the sonne: so impious are her thoughts, so inhumane and bloody her resolutions.

Now in the *Interim* of this time, the old Lecher her father is again become impudent and importunage in this suite. So our wretched Lady *Perina* degenerating from her former vertues, & indeed frō her selfe, she after many requests and solicitations, very laignedly items

to yeeld and strike saile to his desire, but indeed with a bloody intent to dispatch him out of this world. So hauing concluded this sinfull fatall match, there wants nothing but the finishing and accomplishing thereof; onely they differ in the manner and circumstances: the father is desirous to goe to the daughter in lawes bed, the daughter to the father in lawes; but both conclude that the night, and not the day, shall giue end to this lasciuious and beastly busynesse: his reason is, to auoyd the ielousie and rage of *Ierantha*, whom now, although she be neere her time of deliuernce, hee refuseth to marry her; but the Lady *Perina's* is, that shee may pollute and staine his owne bed with his blood, and not hers: but especially because shee may haue the fitter meanes to stabbe and murther him; and heereon they conclude. To which end, not onely the night, but the houre is appoynted betwixt them: which being come, and *Castelnoo* in bed, burning with desire and impatience for her arriuall, he thinking on nothing but his beastly pleasures; nor shee, but on her cruell malice and reuenge: she softly enters his chamber, but not in her night, but her day attire, hauing a *Pis'a* Ponyard close in her sleeve; when, hauing bolted his chamber dore, because none should preuent or diuert her from this her bloody designe; shee approching his bed, and he lifting himselfe vp purposely to welcome and kisse her; she seeing his brest open and naked, like an incensed fury, drawes out her Ponyard, and uttering these words: *Thou wretched whoremaster and murtherer, this life of thine I sacrifice to mine owne honour, and the death of my deare Knight and husband, thy sonne.* And so stabbing him at the heart with many blowes, she kils him

starke dead; and leaves him reeking in his hot blood, without giuing him time to speake a word; onely hee fetcht a serecke and groane or two, as his soule tooke her diuorce and last farewell of his body. Which being ouer-heard of the seruants of the house, they ascend his chamber, and finde our inhumane Lady *Prisina* issuing foorth, all gored with the effusion of his blood, hauing the bloody Poniard, which was the fatal instrument of this cruell murther, in her hand. They are amazed at this bloody and mournfull spectacle: so they seye on her: and the report heereof flying thorow the City, the criminall *Judges* that night cause her to be imprisoned for the fact: which she is resolu'd no way to deny, but to acknowledge, as rather glorying then grieuing therat.

*Ierantha* at the very first understanding hereof, vehemently suspects that her two poysoning murthers will now come to light: and so as great as her belly is, she to prouide for her safety, very secretly steales away to a deare friends house of hers in the City, which now from all parts rattlith and resoundeth of this cruell and vnnaturall murther: yea it likewise passeith the *Alpes*, and is speedily bruited and knowne in Saint *John de Mauriene*, where although her father *Arconeto* would never heretofore affect her, yet hee now exceedingly grieues at this her bloody attempt and imminent danger; but her irregular affection, and inhumane revenge, will not as yet permit her conscience to informe and shew her the hainousnesse of her cruell and bloody fact. But *God* will be more mercifull to her and her soule.

Some two dayes after, she is arraign'd for the same, where

where she freely confesseth it, hauing nothing to alleage for her excuse, but that shee perfectly knew, that her father in law *Castelnoue* and his strumpet *Ieranha*, had at least poysoned the Knight her husband, if not likewise the Lady *Fidelia* his mother: the which although they had some reason and ground to suspect, because of *Ieranha*'s sudden flight, yet sith this could no way diminish, or extenuate her murther of her father in law, they condemne our vnsfortunate Lady *Perina* to be hanged, and so re-send her to prison, to prepare her selfe to dye. But the aduise of some, and the friendhip and compassion of others, as pitying her youth and beauty, and commanding her chastity and affection to her Knight and husband, counsell and perswade her to appeale from this sentence of the Court of *Nice*, to the Senate of *Chambery* (which is the soueraigne and capitall of *Sauoy*) whither wee shall shortly see her conducted and brought.

In which meane time, let vs obserue the wondfull iustice and prouidence of God, shewed likewise vpon this execrable wayting Gentlewoman *Ieranha*, for so cruelly poysoning the Lady *Fidelia*, and the Knight *Castelnoue* her sonne, who, although search were every where made for her, yet she hauing hush'd her selfe vp priuately, albeit her bloudy thoughts and guilty conscience for the same, continually torture and torment her: yet shee is so impious and gracelesse, as she no way feares the danger of the law, and much lesse the seuerre tempest of Gods indignation and reuenge: which now notwithstanding in the middest of her security, will according to her bloudy deserts

and crimes) suddenly surprize and ouertake her: for now this accident of her Lord *Castelnowe's* murther, and of the Lady *Perina's* imprisonment, or to speake more properly and truly, of Gods sacred decree and diuine Iudgement, throwes her into the sharpe and bitter paines of trauell for childe: with whose heart-killing gripes, and convulsions, she is so miserably tortured and tormented, as she her selfe, her Mid-wife and all the women neere her, iudge and thinkie it impossible for her to escape death: when seeing no hope of life, and that already her pangs and torments had made her, but as it were the very image and anatomy of death, she begins to looke from sinne to repentence, from *Earth* to *Heauen*, and from *Satan* to *God*: and so taking on, and assuming a Christian resolution, she will not charge her soule with the concealing of this single adultery, much lesse of her double murthers; but very penitently confesseth all, as well it, as them, and so commits her selfe to the vnparealled, and mercilesse mercies of her paines and torments: hoping they will speedily send her from this world, to a better. But her adultery and murthers are such odious and execrable crimes in Gods sight, as he will free her from these dangers of child-birth, and because worthy, will reserue her for a shamefull and infamous death. So she is safely deliuered of a young son (who is more faire then happy) as being the off-spring of lasciuious parents, and the issue of a most adulterous bed, and by Gods prouidence, and her owne confession, she, for these her beastly and bloody crimes, is the second day committed to prison, and the third hang'd and burnt in *Nice*, and her ashes throwne into the

the ayre. A iust reward and punishment, for so hellish and inhumane a Gentlewoman : who , though otherwaies shewd many testimonies and signes of repentance at her end , yet her crimes were so soule and odious to the world , as at her death shee was so miserable , as shee found not one spectator, either to weepe for her , or to lament , or condole with her .

And now to shut vp this History , let vs carry our curiosities and expectations from *Nice* , to *Chambery* , and from dead *Ierantha* , to our liuing *Perina* : where that graue and illustrious *Senate* , in consideration of her famous chastity , and singular affection to the Knight her husband , as also her Noble parentage and tender yeeres ; they moderate the sentence of *Nice* , for murthering her father in law *Castelnouo* , and so instead of hanging , adiudge her there to haue her right hand cut off , and her selfe to perpetuall imprisonment in *Nice* : where Gods sacred iustice for this her bloody murther , and the remembrance of her dead husband , and liuing sorrowes , so sharply torment and afflict her , as she liued not long in prison , but exceedingly pined away of a languishing consumption ; and so very sorrowfully and repently ended her daies ; being exceedingly lamented of her kinf-folkes , and pittied of all her acquaintance : and had not her affection beene blinded , and her rage and reuenge too much triumphed o're her thoughts and resolutions , she had liued as happy , as she died miserable ; and haue serued for as great a Grace and ornament to her countrey , as *Ierantha* and old *Castelnouo* , her father in law were a scandall and shame .

Thus

Thus wee see, how Gods revenging Justice still  
meetes with murther. O that we may read this Hi-  
story with feare, and profit thereby in reformation,  
that dying to finne, and liuing to righteousnesse,  
we may peaceably dye in this world, and  
gloriouly liue and raigne in  
that to come.

THE

THE TRIUMPHS OF  
GODS REVENGE AGAINST  
the crying and execrable sinne  
of Murther.

History X.

Bertolini seekes Paulina in marriage, but she loues Sturio and not himselfe: he prayes her brother Brellati his deare friend to sollicit her for him, which he doth, but cannot preuaile; whereupon Bertolini lets fall some disgracefull speeches, both against her honour, and his reputation, for which Brellati challengeth the field of him: where Bertolini kills him, and he flies for the same. Sturio seekes to marry her, but his father will not consent thereto, and so conueyes him away secrestly, for which two disasters Paulina dyes for sorrow. Sturio findes out Bertolini, and sends him a challenge, and hauing him at his mercie, giues him his life at his request: he afterwards very treacherously kills Sturio, with a Petronell in the streete from a window: He is taken for this second murther, his two hands cut off, then beheaded, and his body throwne into the Riuer.



Lbeit, that Valour be requisite in a Gentleman, (and one of his most essentiall Vertues and proper ornaments) yet sith Charitie is the true marke and character of a Christian, we shoulde not rashly resolute to hazard the losse

losse of our liues for the preseruation of the meere title, and vaine point of our honour : but rather religiouly endeuour to suite our soules in that of our owne liues, as also of those of our *Chrifian* brethren: for in *Duell*s and single Combats, (which though the heat of youth and reuenge seeme to allow, yet, reason will not, and *Religion* cannot) did we only hazzard our bodies, and not our soules, then our warrant to fight, were in earth as iuft, as now the hazzarding of our soules and bodies is odious and distastefull to *Heauen*, sith in seeking to deface man the creature, we assuredly attempt to strike, and stabbe at the *Maiestie* of God the *Creator*: but if there be any colour or shaddow of honour to kill our aduersary, for the preseruation of the vaine point of our honour: what an ignoble ingratitude, and damnable impiety is it, for a *Gentleman* likewise treacherously to kill another, of whom hee hath formerly receiued his life? yea, as *Grace* fights against this former sort of fighting, so both *Grace* and *Nature* impugne and detest this second sort of murther: A wofull and mournfull president whereof, I here represent in the person of a base and wretched *Gentleman*, whose irregular affection to a *Lady*, first slue her brother in the field; and execrable reuenge to her louer, next drew him treacherously to murther him in the street; and consequently, to his owne condigne punishment, and shamefull death for the same. May all such bloudy murtherers still meet with such ends; and may his miserable and infamous death premonish all other *Gentlemen*, to live and become more charitable, and leſſe bloudy by his example.

The

The friendship and familiarity betwixt Seignior John Battista Bertolini, and Seignior Leonardo Brellati, two Noble young Gentlemen, native and resident of the City of *Rome*, was (without intermission) so intire and intimate, for the space of sixe whole yeeres, which led them from their yeeres of foureteene to twenty, as it seemed they had but one heart in two bodies, and that it was impossible for either of them to be truly merry, if the other were absent: and surely, many were the reasons which layd the foundation of this friendship; for as they were equall in yeeres, so their statures and complexions resembled, and their humors and inclinations sympathized: likewise they were ancient schoole-fellowes, and neere neighbours: for their parents both dwelt betwixt the *Palaces* of the two Cardinals, *Farnese* and *Caponius*: or if there were any disparity in their dignities and worths, it consisted onely in this, *Bertolini's* parents were richer then *Brellati's*, but *Brellati* was more Nobly discended then *Bertolini*: which notwithstanding could no way impeach or hinder the progresse of their friendship, but rather it flourished with the time: so as they increasing in yeeres, they likewise did in affection, as if they were ambitious of nothing so much in this world, as not onely to imitate, but to surpashe the friendship of *Orestes* and *Pillades*, and of *Damon* and *Pithias*: whereof, all who knew them and their parents, yea, all that part and diuision of *Rome*, tooke deepe and singular notice: but to shew that they were men, and not Angels, and consequently subiect to frailty not inherent to perfection, that earth was not *Heauen*, nor *Rome* the shaddow thereof; haue we but a little patience,

we shall shortly see, the thred of this friendship cut off, the props and fortifications thereof razed, battered, and layd leuell with the ground, yea, we shall see time, change with time, friendship turned into enmity, fellowes to foes, loue to loathing, courtesie to crueltie, and in a word, life to death: as obserue the sequell of this History, and it will briefly informe yee how.

Bertolini sees that *Brellati* hath a faire and delicate sister, named *Dona Paulina*, somewhat younger then himselfe, and yet not so young, but that the clocke of her age hath stricken eightene, and therefore proclaimed her at least capeable, if not desirous of marriage, and although hee be a nouice in the *Art* of loue, yet *Nature* hath made him so good a scholler in the principles and rudiments thereof, as hee sees her faire, and therefore must loue her; rich in the excellency and delicacy of beautie, and therefore is resolute to loue her, and only her: for gazing on the influence and splendor of her piercing eyes, hee cannot behold them without wonder, and then prying and contemplating on the roseat and lilly tincture of her cheeke, he cannot see these without admiration, nor refraine from admiring them without affection: but againe, remarking the slendernesse of her bodie, and the sweernesse of her Vertues, and seeing her as gracious as faire, and that her inward perfections added as much lustre to her exteriour beautie, as this reflected ornament and decoration to these; he, as young as he was, vowes himselfe her seruant, and withall swore, that either she, or his graue, must be his wife and Mistris.

Bertolini

Bertolini thus surprized and nettled with the beauty of his dearely sweet, and sweetly faire, *Paulina*; hee is inforced to neglect a great part of his accompanying the brother, thereby to court the sister: so hee many times purposely forsakes *Brellati*, to follow *Paulina*, and delights in nothing so much as in her presence: and (in that regard) in his absence, not that it was possible, in his conceit and imagination, for him any way to hate him, in louing her; rather, that in generall termes hee must loue *Brellati* for *Paulina's* sake; and in particular, onely affect her for his owpe. And as his wealth and ambition made him confident he should obtaine her for his wife: so he in faire, amorous, and honourable tearmes, as well by his owne sollicitations, Letters, promises and presents, as by those of his parents, seeks her in marriage: yea and when these would not suffice, he, to shew himselfe as true as feruent a Louer, addes sighes, teares, prayers, and oathes. But all these sollicitors serue onely to betray and deceiue his hopes: for if *Bertolini* were extremely desirous to marry *Paulina*, she is as resolute not to match him: which discords in affection, seldome or neuer make any true harmony in mindes.

His wealth deceiuing him, hee hath recourse to her onely brother, and his best and dearest friend *Brellati*, to whom he relates the profundity and feruency of his affection to his sister *Paulina*, acquaints him with his suite, and her deniall; his attempt, and her repulse therein; and by the power and bonds of all their former friendship and familiarity, intreats and coniures him to become his oratour and aduocate towards her, in his behalfe; whose smiles, he alleageth, are his life,

B b 3 and

and frownes his death. *Brellati* hauing his generosity and iudgement blinded with the respect of *Bertolini* his wealth, as also of the affection he bore him ; aliother considerations laid apart, like a better friend to him, then a brother to his sister *Paulina*, promiseth him his best furtherance and assistance in the proesse of this his affection : and so, with his truest *Oratory*, best Eloquence, and sweetest Perswasion, begins to deale effectually with her herein. But as our hopes are subiect & incident to deceiue vs, so *Bertolini* and *Brellati* come farre too short of theirs : for *Paulina* in absolute and downe-right tearmes prayes her brother to informe and resolute *Bertolini*, that she hath otherwayes settled and ingaged her affection : and therefore prayes him to seeke another *Mistress*, sith she hath found another Louer and Seruant, with whom shee meaneſ to liue and dye. Her brother ( for his friends sake) is extremely sorrowfull hereat, and prayes his ſister to name him her ſeruant : ſhe bindes him by oath to ſecrefie. So he ſwearing, ſhe informes him it is *Seignior Paulus Sturio*, a very ancient Noble man of the City. He tells her, he is a Gentleman more noble then rich : and ſhe replies, that *Bertolini* is more rich then noble ; and therefore ſhe will refufe him, and marry *Sturio*. He is as obſtinate in his requests, as ſhee reſolute in her denyall. So hauing performed the part of a friend for his friend, and commanding the nobility and vertues of *Sturio*, as much as he pitthyed the weakeſſe of his estate and wealth , hec leaues his ſister to her affection and designes : and ſo with an vnwilling willingneſſe ( without any extenuation ) deliuers his friend *Bartolini* her definitiue anſweſe ; yet performs his

his promise to his sister, in concealing *Sturio* his name.

*Bertolini* is all in fire and choller at this newes, and begins no longer to look on his friend *Brellati* with the eyes of affection, but of contempt and indignation: and so consulting with his passion, not with his iudgement; with rage, and not with reason: as immoderate anger seldome lookes right, commonly squint-eyed; he in the heat of his wrath, and height of his reuenge, very much neglects and flights him, yea and most vniuilly and abruptly departs from him, as if he were no longer worthy of the bare complement offarewell. Which *Brellati* wel obserues, and in obseruing, remembres, and in remembiring, grieues at, fith *Bertolini* was his most intimate and dearest friend; and in whose behalfe, did occasion present, he was ready, not onely to sacrifice his best seruice, but his best life. Lo here the first breach and violation which *Bertolini* giues to their friendship: but the second is not farre behinde: For in the next company hee meets, which was some two dayes after, walking in *Cardinall Farves* his Galleries, in presence of some foure or five other *Gentlemen*, both of his, and of *Brellati's* acquaintance, he forgot himselfe so much, as some demanding for his confort *Brellati*, he chollerickly replyed, that he was a base and beggerly *Gentleman*; and therefore henceforth disdained his company, and that his sister *Paulina* was a lasciuious and dissembling strumpet. But although the fire of his choller had foolishly banded forth these speeches in the ayre, yet they fell not to the ground; but some of the company then present, that very night report them to *Brellati*. It is impossible for my pen to relate

relate how passionately and tenderly hee takes it : yea his affliction and grieve heerein is farre the more redoubled, in that (contrary to his desires and wishes) hee is assured his sister *Paulina* is likewise acquainted with the vanity and iniustice of these speeches: the conceit and remembrance whereof, make her enraged and sorrowfull eyes powre foorth many riulets and riuers of teares, ypon the Roses and Lillies of her beauty. But as she is too impatient to relish this scandalous affront and disparagement: so her brother *Brellati* is too generous and noble to digest it: whereof burning to know the truth ; and resoluing, if he found it true, sharply to reuenge it on *Bertolini*, hee passeth away the night in restlesse and distracted slumbers: And so the very next morne taking his sword and Lackey with him, he goes to *Bertolini* his fathers house, and meeting first with him, demands of him for his sonne *Seignior Iohn Battista Bertolini*. His father informes him he is in the Garden very solitarily walking, and prayes *Brellati* to goe to him; who needing not many requestes, entreteth, and with his hat in his hand approacheth him. *Bertolini* doth the like, and meets him halfe way: when he being pale for anger, and *Bertolini* blushing for shame, hee prayes him to exempt the Garden of his seruants, because he hath some thing to reueale and impart him in secret, which needeth no witnesses: when *Bertolini* commanding his seruants to depart, *Brellati* chargeth him with these disgracefull speeches, vomited forth two dayes since, against his honour; as also that of his onely deare sister *Paulina*, in *Cardinall Farnesi* his Palace, in presence of *Seignior Alessandro Fontani*, *Seignior Rhanutio Pluvinio*, and *Seignior*

Seignior Antonio Voltomari (which words wee haue  
formerly vnderstood.)

*Bertolini* is no way dismayed or daunted hereat, either in courage or complection; and so losing his honour in his indiscretion, or rather burying his discretion in his dishonour; he with fire in his lookes, and thunder in his speeches, tells *Brellati* that he confesseth these speeches his; adding withal, that what his tongue hath affirmed, his sword shall be ready to make good and iustifie, whereon they couer: When *Brellati* demanding him if this were his last resolution, hee told him yea. Then (quoth he) I pray expect mine shortly: and so without giuing each other the good morrow, they part; *Brellati* still leauing *Bertolini* in his fathers Garden. His sister *Paulina* hauing notice of her brothers speaking with *Bertolini*, very curiously and carefully awaits his returne; when rushing into his chamber, she, with teares, and sighes, demands him of the issue of his conference with *Bertolini*, and whether hee were so impudent to deliuere these dishonourable and base speeches both of her selfe and him. But her brother, like a true noble *Romane*, is too generous and braue to acquaint her with his designe and resolution: and so in generall tearmes prayes her, not to affiict her selfe at these speeches; and that this difference will be very shortly decided and ended, to her honour, and his owne content. Brother (quoth shee) if you will not right mine honour, and vindicate the unspotted purity of my reputation, I am sure that my true Louer Seignior *Paulus Sturio* will, though with the hazard and losse of his owne life, had he but the least notice thereof. He shall not need, sister (quoth he:) for a day or two

will reconcile and finish this businesse : and so for that time he leaues his sister *Paulina*, and flouts himself vp in his chamber ; where, not long able to containe himself against the insolency and basenesse of *Bertolini*, he calls for pen and paper, and more respecting his honour then his life, writes him this challenge; the which immediately after dinner he sends him by *Signior Valerio*, a confident Gentleman his follower.

**T**hy scandalous reports, like thy selfe, are so base, and I  
and my sister so honourably descended and bred, as I  
doubt not, but the disgrace and disparagement which thou  
haest uniuersally offered vs, will as iustly reort, and fall on thy  
selfe. And to the end thou maist finde, that my Sword is pur-  
posely reserved to correct and chaffise thy tongue ; as thou  
art a Romane, and a Gentleman, meet me single to mor-  
row at five in the morne, without Port-Popoli, in the next  
field behinde Cardinal Borromeo's Palace, and there I will  
give thee the choyce of two good Rapiers, and Poniards, and  
gladly accept of the refusall, to draw reason of three for those  
wrongs wherewith thou hast iniuriously and maliciously  
traduced vs : and to write thee the truth, as I desire, so I  
can receive no other satisfaction hys thys, whereante thy ma-  
lice inviteth, and my honour obligeth me.

**BERLATTI.**

*Valerio* performes his part well, and fairely working  
and skewering himself into *Bertolini*'s presence, very  
secretly deliviers him his Masters challenge. *Bertolini*  
not ignorant, but coniecturing what it meanes, breaks  
off the seales : and at the perusal thereof, thought his  
cause.

cause be vniust and dishonourable, yet in his countenance and speeches, he shewes much constancy, fortitude and resolution; when considering they were to fight single, and that therefore *Valerio* could bee no second, he deeming his Master had concealed this secret busynesse from him, contents himselfe to giue him onely this answere: Tell your Master *Seignior Brellati* from me, that I will not faile to meet him, according to his desire and appoyntment. And so *Valerio* takes his leauue, and departs: when finding out his Master, he reports him *Bertolini's* answere: whereat hee is so farre from being any way appald or daunted, as hee infinitely reioyceth therewith. In the meane time, he is curious in preparing two singular good Rapiers and Poniards of equall length, hilts, and temper. And thus with much impatient patience (as reuenge is an enemy to sleepe) they not out-sleepe, but out-watch the night. So the mornigne and day stealing and breaking into their windowes, they are no sooner out of their beds, but into the field; their Chirurgians awaiting their arriuals by the Pyramides, in the place of *Pars Popoli*, by which of necessity they were to passe: when, tying vp their horses to the hedges, like resolute Gentlemen, they throw off their doublets, commanding their Chirurgians not to stir from their stations, when, disdaining words, they both draw, and fall to deedes thus:

*Brellate* presenteth the first thrust, and *Bertolini* giues him the first wound in his left shoulder; whereat he is inflamed; and so returnes *Bertolini* the interest of a more dangerous one, on his right side; but it touch't neither his bowels nor quayfe. They try againe: so

Brellati againe wounds Bertolini in his left hand, when his Rapier running thorow his sinewes and Arteries, he is no longer able to hold his Ponyard; but despight his resolution and courage, it falleth out of his hand: which vnlookt for disaster doth much perplexe and afflict him. But Brellati is too generous and noble, to blemish or taint his honour, by taking any aduantage of this his aduersaries misfortune: and so, to cleare his doubts and scruples, very valiantly and brauely throws away his owne Ponyard to the hedge, that they might be as equall in weapons, as courage. But Bertolini will basely require this courtesie: they retire and take breath; and so trauersing their grounds, thereby to take the benefit of the Sunne, they againe ioyne: at the first cloze of this second meeting, Brellati runnes Bertolini into the right flanke, when withdrawing his Rapier, and leaping backe to put himselfe vpon his defensiuе guard and posture, his foot slipping, hee could not preuent falling to the ground: when Bertolini following him close, and beeing eager in his pursuit; and blood-thirsty in his revenge, he forgetting Brellatis former courtesie, and working vpon the fortune of his misfortune, right then and there nailed him to the ground, & so redoubling his thrust, acted a perpetuall diuorce betwixt his body & soule: when Brellati's Chirurgian shedding teares on his dead Master, and beginning to take order for his decent conueyance into the City, Bertolini takes vp his Chirurgian behinde him, and so with all possible speed and celerity (the better to auoyd the danger of the law) poalts o're y fields, and comes into Mount Cauallo gate, & so husheth himself vp priuately in a frieds house of his, neer his fathers.

All Rome beginnes to echo forth and resound this murther; and farre the more, because *Bertolini* and *Brellati* were so deare and intimate friends: but as good newes comes alwaies lame, and bad rides poast: so within one hour of *Brellati* his murther, the newes thereof is brought first to his father, then to his Sister *Paulina*: whereat hee grieues, and shee stormes; hee sorroweth, and shee weepes and lamentes; and in a word, the father would, but cannot, and the daughter can, but will not be comforted, at this sad and mournfull tragedy. Neither must we forget, but remember Seignior *Paulus Sturio*, who loving *Paulina* a thousand times dearer then his owne life, is no sooner acquainted, but afflicted with this newes of *Brellati* his death, as being his deare friend, and which is more, the onely brother of his dearest and onely Mistris, *Paulina*: so, as Lovers and friends being best knowne and discerned in calamities and afflictions, hee repaires to her, condoles with her, and vieth his chieffest Art and zeale, not onely to participate, but wholly to deprive her of her sorrowes: yea, to proue himselfe a constant friend, and a faithfull Lover to her, he proffereth her, not onely his seruice, but his life, as well to raigne her honour, as to reuenge her brothers death on *Bertolini*: but this affection and perswasion of *Sturio*, is not capeable to wipe off, or exhale his Lady *Paulina*'s teares.

But againe to *Bertolini*, who is so farre from contrition and repentance of this his bloudy fact, as like a prophane miscreant, and debauch'd and dissolute Gentleman, he triumphs, and glories therein: yea, his impudency is become so ignorant, and his ignorance

for sorrowish, as he beganne to enter into a resolution  
 againe to court and seeke *Pantina* for his wife, with-  
 out respecting or regarding either the publique dan-  
 ger of the law, or that of *Pantina*'s private revenge:  
 for sure, her Brothers death had throwne her into such  
 violent passions of griefe, and extremities of sorrow,  
 as if his folly had made her so happy: doubtlesse his  
 revenge would haue made him more miserable, but  
 God had taught her rage more reason, and her ma-  
 lice and cruelty not so much impiety: yea, it pleased  
 his Divine Maiestie, not so soone to call him to an ac-  
 compt, and punish him for this his Bloody fact; but  
 reseruing him for a future shame and punishment, be-  
 ing affrighted with a tumultuous rumor and allarum  
 of a generall search to be made that night for his ap-  
 prehension, he very subtilly, in a *Capuchins* habit,  
 passeth *Saint John de Laterans* gate; and there having  
 post-horses layd for him, hee as swift as the wind  
 gallops away for *Naples*, and imbarking himselfe for  
*Cicily*, passeth the *Phare of Messina*, landis at that  
 Citie, and so rides vp for *Palermos*, where he thinkes  
 himselfe safe. But hauing not made his peace with  
 God, where euer he flic, *God* will in due time finde  
 him out, when he least dreames thereof: but although  
 the power and influence of time be so predominante to  
 deface the actions and accidents of time; yet *Pan-*  
*tina* can give no truce to her teares, nor will she ad-  
 minister any consolation to her sorowes for her bro-  
 thers death: And if euer, now it is that *Saintio* resembl-  
 bling himselfe, beginnes to make her sorowes his  
 for having deeply rooted and settled his affection on  
*Pantina*, and naturally ingrained her beauty and picture  
 in

in the very centre of his heart and thoughts, he begins to make his private affection to her publique, and so having already wonne her heart from her selfe he now endeuoureth to winne her from her friends, and then to marry her. But old Seignier Sturio his father, is no sooner aduertised of Berlino's death, of Berolino's flight, and of his sonnes affection and intent to take Paulina to wife, but disdayning he should match so low, and withall so poore, as also fearing that this might likewise ingage his sonne in some quarrell between him and Berolino, he resolues priuately to convey him away out of Roma, in some retired or obscure place, from whence he shold not returne, till his absence had cooled and extenuated the heat of his affection to Paulina, and of his malice and reuenge to Berolino: to whiche end, three weekes are scarce past, but taking his sonne with him in his Coach, vnder colour to take the ayre in the fields of Rome, beyond S. Peters Church, he having giuen the Coach-man his lesson, commands him to drive away, & having two Beaucs or Ruffians with him, they dispose, or rather enforce the burnour of his sonne Sturio to patience, as despight himselfe, they carry him to Naples, where a Brigantine being purposely prepared, he shippeth over his sonne for the land of Capri, or Caprea (where long since, Sejanus his ambition caused Tiberius to sojourne, whiles hee played the petitie King, and domineered as Emperour at Rome in his absence) and gives him to the keeping and guard of Seignior Alphonse Drissa, Captaine of that land, with request & charge not to permit him to returne, for the mainte, for the tearing of one whole yeere,

yeare, without his expresse order to the contrary.

It is for nothe but for Louers to judge, how tenderly *Sturio* and his sweet Lady *Pandina* grieve at the newes of this their sudden & vncpected separation : yea, their sighes and teares are so infinit for this their disaster , as all the words of the world are not capable to expresse them. As for *Pandina*, she had so long and so bitterly wept for her bothers death, as it was a meere cruelty of sorrow, to inforce her to play any farther part in sorrow, for the departure and captiuity of her Louer *Sturio*: but her afflictions falling in, each on the necke of other ( in imitation of the waues of the sea, occasioned by the breath and blast of *Boreas*) threaten her not onely with present sicknesse, but with approaching death. Againe she vnderstands of *Beritolian's* safety , and prosperity in *Cicilia*, where he triumphs in his victory , for killing her brother *Brellati*; and like a base Gentleman, continually effects his trophees of detraction vpon the ruines and tombe of her honour : and these consideracions (like refresched afflictions) againe newly afflict and torment her : so as hauing lost her Iewell and her ioy, her brother and her Louer , *Brellati* and *Sturio*, she beginnes to be extreme sicke, weake, and faint : yea, the Roses of her cheekes are transformed to Lillies; the reluctant lustre of her eyes, to dimnesse and obscurity: and to vise but a word , not onely her heart, but her tongue begins to faile, and to strike faile to immoderate sorrow and disconsolation. Her parents and friends grieve hereat, and farre the more, in respect they know not how to remedy it; and for herselfe, if she enjoy any comfort in this life, it is onely in hope that she shall shortly

shortly leauie it, to enjoy that of a better. Thus whiles sorrow, vexation and sicknesse make haste to spin out the thred and webbe of her life, if her grieves are extreme and insupportable in *Rome*, no lesse are those of her Louer *Sturio* in *Caprea*: for it frets him to the heart and gall, to see how his father hath bereaued and betraied him of his Mistris *Paulina's* presence, the onely content, and felicity, which this life and earth could affoord him a thousand times he wisheth himselfe with her, and as often kissteth her remembrance and *Idea*: and then as their affections, so their malice concurring and sympathizing, hee againe wisheth that he may bee so happy, to fight with *Bertolini* for his disgrace of his Lady *Paulina*, and she for the death of her brother *Brellas*, and in that affection and this reuenge, hee with much affliction and no comfort, paſſeth away many bitter daies and torments, in the misery of this his inforced exile and banishment: and although his curiositie, affection, or subtilitie could never crowne him with the happinesse or felicity, to free himselfe of his gardes and captiuity, and so to steale away from that land in ſome Foift, or Galley for the maine: yet, vnderſtanding that two daies after, there was bound for the Port of *Ciuita Vecchia*, he, to teſtifie his affection, constancy, and torments to his deare and faire *Paulina*, takes occation to write her a Letter to *Rome*; the which, that it might come the ſafer to her owne hands, hee incloſeth in another, to an intimate deare friend of his. The tenor of this Letter was thus given, ſpeaketh nothing to let me downe, as  
In French, Dutch, and all other vniuersall languages,  
and I know

D.d.

I know not whether I more grieue at my affliction from  
 what other as the manner thereof: yet surely am I but but  
 conoynd, make me in this Island of Caprea fedelitatem  
 mens, nor of a feigned Purgatory, but of a true Hell: it  
 was my purpose to condole with thee, for the untimely death  
 of thy brother: it is now not only my resolution, but my  
 practice, to mourne with my selfe for thy bastimento; dñe  
 ther with thee for mine, and when my sorruers have most  
 need of consolation, then against that consolation finde most  
 cause of sorrow: for thinking of Bertolini, me thinkes that  
 thy false dispraiement on his malicious tongue, and thy  
 brother Brallati his true death, on his bloudy sword: and  
 yet haue neither the bittur or hoppynesse to venge either,  
 and which is worse, not be permitted to know where he is,  
 that I may revenge them: but I will know shelye incident  
 and oblige to suppose this affliction, conditionally then  
 were exempt thereof, or that I might know the lenth and  
 period of our absence, thereto to hope for an end and re-  
 medy thereof, which now I can finde no moerte to kno,  
 nor cause to hope. O that I haue often envied Leanders  
 hoppynesse! And if loue could make impossibilities possible,  
 the Mediterranean sea should long since haue bocht my  
 Hellespont, my body, my braks, and my arme, my ears  
 to haue wasted me from thy Abidos, to thy Sestos, from  
 my Caprea to thy Rome, to thee, sweet Paulina, my only  
 faire and deare Hiero: and although the constancy and  
 seruency of my loue to thee, suggest me many inventiones to  
 escape the nessey of my exiles: yet, the Argus eyes of my  
 farbers malice, in that of thy Gardians jealousy, cannot  
 be incchanted or lulled asleepe with the melody of so un-  
 fortunate a Mercury as my selfe: but time shall shortly all  
 and finish that which impatience cannot, till when, Deare

and

and Sweet Paulina, receive me gently thynges, as I doe  
thee in my heart and memory; and doubt not that infir  
my weeks will make us as happy, as we are now miserable.

## STYRIO.

Paulina, in the middest of her sorrowes and sick  
nesse, receiuic peace from her best and dearest  
friend Surius, and although she reioyce to heare of his  
health and wel-fare in Caprea, yet she is more glad, that  
the extremitie of her sicknesse and weakenesse informe  
her, she shall shortly dye in Rome: for vanquished  
with afflictions, and ouer-come with variety of griefe  
and discontents, she in conceit hath already left this  
world, and is by this time, halfe-way in her progress  
and pilgrimage towards Heaven, yet in loue to her  
deare Surius, who wrote her this kinde Letter, she will  
not be so unkinde, but will kisse it for his sake that sent  
it her: and peraduenture, if she had beene so happy,  
that he might haue beeene the bearer and deliverer  
thereof him selfe; on that he had borne and delive  
red himselfe to her in stead of his Letter, hee might  
then haue giuen some comfort to her sorrowes, and  
some consolation to her discontents and afflictions,  
whereas now seeing him exiled, and mewed vp in  
Caprea, without any apparence of returne, she sees  
she hath more reason to flie to her old despaine, then  
to any new hope, and so wisheth the desired houre  
were at last come, wherin she might give her last fare  
well to this world: but againe perusing and ouer-rea  
ding his Letter, she findes it full fraught with loue  
and affection towards her: and therefore disdayning  
to prove ingratefull to any, especially to Surius, who

is so kinde and courteous to her, calls for penne and paper, and by his owne conveyance returnes him this answere:

**I**CANNOT rightly define, whether the receipt of thy Letter made mee more glad, or the contents sorrowfull: for as I infinitely rejoiced to understand thou wert living, so I extremely grieved to heare there was no certainty of thy releasement and returne: whether or no Caprea bee in Purgatory, I know not, but sure I am, Rome is my Hell, sith I cannot be there with thee, nor thou here with me: and as I lamented with sighes, I could not dye with my brother, so I grieve with teares, that I cannot live with thee: but why write I of living, when his mournfull Tragedy, and thy disasterous exile hath made mee more ready to dye than live, or rather not in time, but dye? for despoyring of thy returne, how can I hope for comfort, sith I onely liue in thy presence, as my heart and ioy did in thee? As for Bertolini's folly so meet, and crime to my brother, if thy fauour remisse him now, Gods iust reuenge will, and wisth me as a woman, as a Christian, I pardon and forgive him, and so I pray doe thou for my sake, if thou wilst not for that of my dead brothers. Could prayers, or wishes haue effected thy returne to mee, my teares had long since beeene thy Hellepont, and Mediterranean sea, and my sighes had fill'd the stales of my desires and resolutions to haue past Ostia, floated up Tiber, and landed in Rippa to mee: but alas, alas! heere in remembryng Hero's felicitie and ioy, I cannot forget my sorowes and afflictions: for as Leander liv'd in her names, so I cannot be so fortunate, either to liue andye in my Sturio's; and if

now, as a shiffull Mercury, thou couldest inueigle the eyes  
both of thy fathers malice, and Guardians iustice: yet that  
happynesse would come too late, and out of season: for me-  
suer before thou shal haue plotted thy flight and escape from  
Caprea to Rome, I shall haue acted and finisched mine  
from Rome to Heauen. I wold send thee more times, but  
that my weake hand, and feeble fingers haue not the power,  
though the will, any longer to retaine my pen. Heauen  
will make vs happy, though Earth cannot: therefore my  
dame Sturio let this be our last and best consolation; as  
these joyes are temporary, and transitory, so those will bee  
permanent and eternall.

## PAULINA

This Letter of Paulina to Sturio, meets with a spe-  
cudy passage from *Rome to Caprea*; who receyving it, and  
thinking to haue found her in her true and perfect  
healtch, with much ioy and affection breakes vp the  
seales thereof, when, contrary to his hope and ex-  
pectation, ynderstanding of her sicknesse and approach  
to death, he tenderly and bitterly weepes at his owne  
misfortune in her discontent and disaster: yea he pa-  
ssionately and sorrowfully bewailes his fathers cruelty,  
in thus banishing him from her sight and presence,  
from the contemplation of whose beauty, and from  
his innate affection to her, the fates and destinies can-  
not banish him. But alas, vnsfortunate *Sturio!* the newes  
of thy *Paulina's* sicknesse, is but the *Prologue* to the en-  
suing fortowes and afflictions, that are ready to befall  
and surprize thee: for the newes of her death (shall

shortly follow her Letters; and if that diueit  
from thine eyes, this shall drowne thine eyes in the  
Oear of thy teares: neither shall hee stay long to seeke  
the miserable impetuosity of this modirnfull storme:  
For scarce twenty dayes are past, after she writing of  
her Letter to *Sturio*, but *Paulina* languishing with  
griefe, despaire, sorrow and sicknesse, as a female loue  
*Martyr*, takes her last leaue and farewell of this world  
in *Rome*; it being not in the power or affection of her  
parents, any longer to diuert her from paying this her  
last due and tribute unto Nature, sith we all haue our  
liues lent, not giuen vs; and therefore as we receiuie, so  
we must repay them to our *Creator* and *Redeemer*, of  
whom we haue first receiuied them.

Old *Sturio* is as glad in *Rome* for the death of *Paulina*, as her parents grieue therat; and now it is that he  
intends to be as happy and ioyfull in his sonnes pre-  
sence, as he hath formerly made himselfe sorrowfull  
in occasioning his absence. Mylestuperi, with all ex-  
pedition, he dispatcheth a servant of his to *Cayre*, with  
a Letter, to signifie his sonne therof, and consequently  
to recall him. This newes of *Paulina*s death infinitely  
afflicts and tormentes our *Sturio*: for shee being the  
Queene of his affections, and the soueraignet Goddess  
of his delights and deastes, hee resembelth himselfe,  
and so like a true Lover as hee is, aeth a wonderful  
mournful part of sorrow for her vnwished and vngue-  
ded death, he is no longer himselfe: nay, such was his  
louing affection to *Paulina*, and such is his immoderate  
sorrow for her death, as he will not behimselfe, because  
she is gone, who was the greatest and chiefest part of  
himselfe. But as wounds cannot be cured, ere searched,

so passion trasporting his thoughts beyond reason, and  
reuenge beyond passion; he, for the tyme present, for-  
sakes the effect, to follow the cause; and so hath no o-  
ther obie<sup>t</sup> before his eyes and thoughts, but that of  
Bertolini his killing of her brother *Brellati*; and this of  
his fathers unkind banishing of him from *Rome* to *Ca-  
prea*: wherefore, that hee may outlive his sorrowes, and  
apply a lenitue to his corrosive, he vowed to reuenge  
both. The manner is thus: That as his father deceiued  
his hopes, in carrying him from *Rome* to *Caprea*: so he  
will deceiue those of his said father, in carrying him  
fift from *Caprea* to *Cicily*, there to finde one *Borghini*,  
and to fight with him: it is not the peyne of honour,  
much lesse, judgement, and least of all, Religion, that  
precipitated and throwes him on this bloody, and  
therefore uncharitable resolution. But it is the vanity  
of his thoughts, and his living affection to his dead  
*Mistress Paulina*, which giues life and birth to it: for  
he trampling on all dissuasion and opposition, finding  
a Galley of *Naples*, bound from *Caprea* to *Cicily*,  
very secretly imbarke himselfe on her, and contem-  
ning the impetuousity of the windes, and the mercilesse  
mercy of the seas, lands at *Paterno*, where hushing  
himselfe up the first night privately in his Ione, and in-  
forming himselfe that *Bertolini* was in that City; hee,  
the next morne, by his Lackey, sendshim this chal-  
lenge: *Hast thou seen me? and art thou worthy to be  
my son? to haue a wife as valiorous and no egle as ioy-*

**H**aving killed my daur *Paulina*, in the scandall of her  
behaviour, and the death of her brother *Brellati*, my af-  
fections and sympathies surulys her, make me eadieme  
more life, to stekethine: to which purpose I have left  
*Caprea*,

Caprea, to finde Cicily, and in it thy selfe. Wherefore as then art Bertolini, saile not to meete me this evening 'twixt five and sixe of the cloake, in the next Meadow, behinde the Carthusians Monastery : where my selfe, assisted onely with a Chirurgian, and the chayre of two single Rapiers, will expect and attend thee : thy generosity inviteth thee, and my affection and honour obligeth me so to be the onely ghest of this bloody banquett.

**STURIO.**

Bertolini receiuies and readeas this challenge, which to write the truth, is not so pleasing to him as was that of Brellati : he sees himselfe and his honour ingaged to fight, and knowes not how to exempt and free himselfe thereof. For first, he considereth that the ground of his defence and quarrell is not good, sith hee knew in his soule and conscience, that *Paulina* was as chaste as faire, and that he had wronged himselfe, in seeking to wrong and scandalize her ; then that hee perfectly vnderstood *Sturio* was valiant and generous, yea and very expert and skilfull in handling his weapons ; and withall, that single combates were variable, and onely constant in vncertainty : so that hee began not onely to doubt, but feare, that as he had killid Brellati, so *Sturio* was reserved to kill him : but againe, considering that his birth and blood was noble ; it contrariwise so incited and animated his courage, and inflamed and set an edge on his generosity, as with a kind of vnwilling willingness he accepts of *Sturio*'s challenge, and so bade his Lackey tell his Master from him, that he would not faile to meete him, to give him his welcome to *Palerme*. The cloake striketh five, and long before

fore sixe, our two young *Gentlemen* come ride into the field; where, giuing their horses to their Chirurgians, with command not to stirre till their duty and office call them, they both draw, and so approach each other. But though this fury of theirs begin in blood, yet it shall not heere end in death. At first comming vp, *Sturio* wards *Bertolini's* thrust, and runnes him into the right flanke, of a deepe wound: at the second, hee wounds him againe in the necke, which drawes much blood from him: neither is the third meeting more propitious, or lesse fatall to him: for *Sturio*, without receiuing any touch or scar, giues him a third wound twixt his small ribs; wherat his courage feareth, & his strength fainteth; when willing to saue his life, though with the losse of his honor, he throws away his Rapiere, and with his hat in hand, begs his life of *Sturio*, and with as much truth as integrity, confesseth and voweth, that he is infinitely sorrowfull and repentant for the scandal, deliuered against the honour of his most faire and chaste *Lady Paulina*; for the which hee craves pardon and remission. *Sturio* is astonished at this vnexpected and cowardly act of *Bertolini*: wherat he bites his lip, but I know not whether more with disdainē then anger: onely at first the remembrance of *Brellati* and *Paulina's* deathes, for the present make him inexorable to his request and submision: but at last, making reason give a law to choller, and Religion to reuenge, and considering that hee was more then a man, sith a *Christian*, as also that the lustre of his blood and extraction had distinguished him from the vulgar, and so made him honourable and noble; he, not as a cruell *Tiger*, but as a generous *Lion*, disd

blemish his reputation and valour in killing a disarmed man : and so his honour outbrauing his valour and reuenge, he as a truly noble Gentleman, giues Bertolini his life, as holding himselfe satisfied, by hauing righted the honour of his dead Mistris Paulina, in Bertolini's confession and contrition. So they sheathe vp their swords, and like louing friends returne together into the City : where Sturio prepareth for his departure, and Bertolini betakes himselfe to haue his wounds dressed and cured.

This combate, or *Duell*, is not so secretlye carryed betwixt them and their *Chirurgians*, but all *Palermo* resounds and prattles thereof; and which is more, this newes speedily sailes from *Cicily* to *Naples*, and from thence rides poast to *Rome*, where *Sturio* and *Bertolini* likewise in short space arriue : but first comes *Sturio*, then *Bertolini*, (whose father by this time hath obtained his pardon for killing of *Brellati*.) The *Nobility* and *Gentry* of *Rome* speake diuerfly and differently of our two late return'd *Gallants*: some, out of reason, highly applaud *Sturio*'s fighting with *Bertolini*, occasioned through his affection to his dead *Mistris Paulina*, and then, his humanity and courtesie shewed and extended him, in giuing him his life : others, out of the errors of youth and vanity, taxe and condemne him for not dispatching and killing him. Againe, many extoll *Bertolini* his valour in killing *Brellati*, but all taunt and taxe him for his cowardize, in not fighting it out with *Sturio*; and which is worse, for disgracefully begging and receiuing his life of him. *Bertolini* findes this scandall throwne and retorted on him, to bee very dishonourable : in so much as hee cannot relish,

rellish it, but with discontent, nor digest it, but with extreme indignation and choller: which throwes him so violently on the execrable humour of reuenge, as he vowes to make *Sturio* pay deare for giuing too much liberty to his tongue, to the preiudice of his honor & reputation. Pufft vp thus with these three execrable humours and vices, disdaine, enuy and reuenge, whereof the least is great and capable enough to ruine both a fortune and a life: he, out of a wretched resolution, (vnworthy the generosity of a Gentleman) not onely forgets *Sturio* his singular courtesie in giuing him his life, when it lay in his power and pleasure to take it from him, but also remembreth, and in that remembrance resolueth to repay him with the vngratefull requitall, and mournfull interest of depriving him of his. O extreme ingratitude! O vncharitable and base resolution! yea he is so deuoyd of reason, and the purity of his soule and conscience so contaminated and vilified with the contemplation and obiect of blood, as he giues way thereto, and resolues thereon: yea, permits it to forfeake *God*, of purpose wilfully to follow the diuell: yea, his thoughts are so surprized and taken vp with this execrable and hellish resolution of murther, as he thinks of nothing else but of the means and manner how to dispatch *Sturio*; and so to send him in a bloody winding-sheet, from this life to another. To fight with him againe in the field, he dares not, to assassinate and murther him in his bed, he cannot, sith he must passe fife or sixe feuerall chambers, ere he can come at his: and to pistoll him in the open street, though it bee lesse difficult, yet hee findes it most dangerous, sith hee sees *Sturio* still went bet-

ter followed and accompanied then himselfe, as indeed being more eminent of birth, and noble of extraction then himselfe. But he shall want no iuention to accomplish and bring this his bloody resolution to passe : for if he faile thereof, the diuell is still at his elbow to prompt and instruct him therein : yea his impiety is growne so strong with the diuell, and his faith so weake with God, as now hauing turned ouer the records of his reuenge, hee at last resolues to shoot *Sturio* frō a window, with a Petronell, as he passeth the street : and vpon the attempt and finishing of this hellish stratagem and bloody *Tragedy*, the diuell and he strike hands, and conclude it : the contriuing and perpetrating whereof, shall in the end strangle him, because he was so prophane and gracelesse, as hee would not strangle the first conceit thereof in their births and conceptiones.

But leue we here *Bertolini* ruminating on his intended bloody crime of murther, and come we a little to speake of poore vnfortunate *Sturio*, who not dreading of his malice, much lesse of his vngratefull and bloody reuenge intended against him, like a mournfull and disconsolate constant Louer, is thinking on nothing so much, as on the liuing beauty and *Idea* of his dead *Panlina* : and although he knew it as palpable folly to bewray his immoderate sorrowes, as discretion to conceale them ; yet their impetuosity and seruency giue such a predominating law to his resolutions, as hee cannot refraine from often stealing into *Santa Maria de Rotunda's* Church, where shee was buried, and there secretly bedewes her tombe, and washes her Sepulchre with his teares : an aēt and ceremony

remony of Louers, which though affection authorize, yet Religion doth neither iustifie, nor can approue: all the care of his father and friends is to seeke how to purge his pensiuenesse, and to wipe off his melancholy sorrowes, and sorrowfull melancholinesse: to which end they proffer him great variety of Noble and beautifull Ladies in marriage, hoping that the sight and presence of a new beauty, would deface the memory and absence of an old: but their policy proves vaine: for Sturio, will be as constant in his sorrowes, for his sweet *Paulina's* death, as he was in his affection to her whiles she liued; and therefore, although their power enforce him to see diuers, yet his will can never be drawne, or inforced to loue any, as hauing inuiolably contracted himselfe to this definitiue resolution, that sith he could not be *Paulina's* husband, he will never wed himselfe to any other wife then his graue.

And here I beginne to write rather with teares, then inke, when I apprehend and consider how soone our poore and innocent *Sturio* shall be by the bloody hand of *Bertolini* layd in his vnfortunate and vntimely graue. Ah *Sturio, Sturio*, hadst thou beene more vindictive, and lesse generous and compassionate, thou hadst preuented thy death by killing *Bertolini*, when thy valour in *Caprea* formerly reduced and exposed him to the mercy of thy sword; or if thou hadst beleeuued this *Maxime*, that dead men can never offend or hurt, thou needest not haue relied and trusted vpon the false promises of an incensed, and irreconcileable enemy: but what shall I say? It was not thy honour, but *Bertolini's* infamy, which hastneth

and procureth thy death. O that thou shouldest be so true a friend to thine enemy, and he proue so deadly an enemy to thee his true friend ! *Sturio* gaue *Bertolini* his life, and *Bertolini*, in requitall, will giue *Sturio* his death : but such monstrous and bloody ingratitude will neuer goe vnpunished of *God*; for as it is odious to earth, so it is execrable to *Heauen*: but I must be so vnfortunate, to bring this deplorable Tragedy on the Theatre of this History : A misery of miseries, that we are many times neerest our ends, when we thinke our selues farthest from them : and (not to rush into the sacred and secret Closet of *Gods* inscrutable prouidence) I can finde no other pregnant reason thereof either in Diuinity or Nature, but that at all times and in all places, we should be still prepared and ready for death, e're death for vs, and not protracting or procrastinating the houre thereof, but that whensoeuer it shall please *God* to call vs to him, or himselfe to vs, that (like good Christians) death may still finde vs alwaies arm'd to meet, neuer vnprouided to encounter it.

But *Bertolini* is so obstinate in his malice, and so wretchedly implacable in his revenger, as vnderstanding that *Sturio* is accustomed to goe to his mornings Mass, at the *English Colledge*, he prouides both himselfe and his Petronell charged with a brace of bullets, (or rather the deuill prouides both the bullets, the Petronell and himselfe:) and so, watching the aduantage of his houre and time, in a Munday morning, a little after the Cardinals, *Farnesi* and *Caponius*, were ridden with their traines to the Confissory, putting himselfe into an vndeclared house betwixt

twixt the sayd English Colledge and the Palace of Far-  
neſſe, he hauing his cocke bent, and ſeeing Sturio com-  
ming in the ſtreet, vpon his prauincing Barbary horſe  
and foot-cloth, like a graceleſſe and bloudy villaine  
(hauing neither the feare of God, nor the ſaluation or  
damnation of his ſoule before his eyes, nor once  
imaginig that hee ſhootes at the Maieſtie of God  
the Creator, in killing and defacing man his image  
& creature:) lets flie at him, and the deuill had made  
him ſo curious and expert a marke-man, as both the  
bullets pierce the trunke of his brefte, with which mor-  
tall wounds, our innocent Sturio no longer able to  
fit his horſe, tumbles downe dead to the ground,  
without hauing the power to vtter a word, but onely  
to breathe forth two or three lamentable and deadly  
grones: and this was the vnfourtunate and mourn-  
full end of this Noble Gentleman Sturio, which I can-  
not relate without ſighes, nor reiember without  
teares.

This bloudy Tragedy acted on ſo braue a Gallant,  
in the very bowels and heart of Rome, doth extremely  
amaze, and draw all the ſpectators to lamentation and  
mourning, and his two ſeruants, who walked by his  
horſe ſide, are ſo buſie in lifting him vp, and rubbing  
the temples of their dead Master, as they forget the  
reſearch and enquiry for his murtherer: but the af-  
filiants and standers by, hearing the report of the  
peece, and not onely ſeeing the ſmoake in the win-  
dow and ayre, but this Noble Gentleman dead in the  
ſtreet, they ascend the house, finde the Petronell on  
the table, but the ſhooter fled vpon a ſwift Spanish  
Gennet, by the backe doore, they of the house affir-  
ming

ming with teares, that they knew not the Gentleman that did it , neither was it in their powers to stop or preuent his escape.

This fatall and mournfull newes dispersed and spred o're the Citie of *Rome*, the Sargeant and Capaines guard are busie to finde out the murtherer, who by this time they know to be *Seignior Bertolini*: but being gallantly mounted , hee speeds away thorow the streets amaine, and is so farre from despaire, as hee makes no doubt, but to recouer the *Latteran* gate, and to escape this his second danger, as fortunately as he did his first, by flying into the Kingdome of *Naples*: but his hopes shall deceiue him : for if hee bought *Brellati's* murther at an easie rate, *God* hath now ordained and decreed, that he shall pay deare for this his second of *Sturio* : and lo, heere the impetuous storne of Gods iust revenge and indignation now befalls him , when hee least thinkes or feares thereof: The manner thus:

As he was swiftly galloping thorow *Campo de Fugro*, (the publique place where the Pope (that Antichrist of *Rome*) burnes the children of *God*, for the profession of his glorious Gospell) and being at the farther end thereof, with an intent to draw towards the back-side of the *Capitall*, behold, two brick-layers building of a house vpon a scaffold , two stories high in the streete; as *Bertolini* passed, both the scaffold, & the two brick-layers fell downe vpon him, and his horse ; and so beat them both to the ground : but as yet the newes of *Sturio's* murther was not arriued thither: so as danger and feare making *Bertolini* forget the hurt of his fall, hee againe riseth vp, and calls for his horse, which

which was speedily brought him : so leaping into his saddle , hee spurs away , with as much celerity as his Gennet could possible drive vnder him : but if he haue elcaped this first iudgement of God , hee shall not the second ; for hauing past the *Capitoll* and the *Amphi-theatre*, his Gennet twixt that and the *Lateran*, fell vnder him, which putting his shoulder out of ioynt, the poore afflicted beast could not rise with his master , who by this time is more afflicted and grieued, then the harmeleffe Gennet he rides vpon. Whereupon being amazed , and fearing that the search would instantly follow and surprize him , he leauing his horse, betakes himselfe to his owne heelles: and so with much terrour both of minde and conscience, hee knowes not whither to goe , or where to hide himselfe : but at last considering that the greatest dangers haue need of the least distfaction, and most diserction, hee thinkes to flie on his right hand to *Horta Farnesi*, or the gardens & orchards which belong to that *Illustrious Family*: but then againe, fearing to meet with a wooden face, in stead of finding an open doore, he leaves that resolution , and (as fast as his legges and feet can beare him) flies on his left hand vp towards *Nero's tower*, ( so famous for that Emperours infamy in standing thereon , when he delighted to see all *Rome* on fire ) and here in the ruines and demolitions of an infinite number of Palaces, Churches and other stupendious buildings , our murtherous *Bertolini* hides and husheth vp himselfe , hoping if the day were past, to escape and recover some secret friends house by night.

But God is too iust, to let this his cruell fact passe

vnreuenged, and this bloody murtherer vnpunished: for he hath scarce beene there halfe an houre , but he is knowne there, found out and hemm'd in of all sides by the Captaines gard, arm'd with Partisans and Pistols. Here *Bertolini* considering himselfe a *Roman Gentleman*, would feyne haue made some resistance with his Rapier: but seeing their numbers to increase, and himselfe alone, as also that it would farther augment his crime, and exasperate his Judges against him, he at their first assymons deliuereth vp his Rapier, and yeelds, and rendereth himselfe into their hands, who presently conuey him to prison, where he shall haue but little time to thinke of his hainous, and bloody murthers, ere we shall see him brought foorth and artaigned before his Judges : but in the *Interim* all *Rome* is possessed and informed hereof.

So the second morne of *Bertolini* his imprisonment, he is fetcht before his Judges, where at first the deuill is so strong with him, as he once thought to haue denied this murther of *Sturio*: but God prouing more mercisfull to his soule, he vpon his Judges graue and religious remonstrances, with many sighes and teares freely confesseth it, humbly beseeching them to take pitty of his young yeeres, and that it was onely the heate of youth, and the vanity of his ambitious honour, which had thus betrayed and seduced his soule to perpetrate this cruell and impious murther, and for the which hee extremely and bitterly repented himselfe.

But the arrow of *God's* wrath and revenge, is now fully bent against *Bertolini*, as his bullets were against *Sturio*: so as his *Sacred Maiesty*, causing his Judges

to resemble themselues, they are deafe to his requests, and tell him, it is not his youth or his ambition, but the devill that hath seduced and drawne him to per- forme this bloody murther : and so for expiation thereof, they, in consideration he is a Roman Gentleman, nobly descended, will not hang him, but ad- judge his two hands to be cut off before the house where he shot at *Sturio*, and then to be beheaded at the common place of execution, at the foote of *Saint Angelos* bridge, his head to be set vpon a pole, ouer *Saint John de Laterans* gate, and his body to be throwne into *Tiber* : which the next day was accor- dingly executed in presence of many thousand peo- ple of both sexes and of all rankes, notwithstanding the importunate sollicitations which his father made to *Cardinall Borgheſe* (the Pope *Paulus Quintus* Ne- phew) to the contrary; who was too Noble and ge- norous to affit him in ſo base and ignoble a mur- ther.

And these were the liues and deaths of theſe three vnfortunate *Roman Gentlemen*, *Brellati*, *Sturio*, and *Ber- tolini*, and of that beautifull, chaste, and sorrowfull Lady-*Paulina*. And here to conclude and ſhut vp this their mournfull History ; I haue beene informed that the curious wits of *Rome* made many exquifeite Epi- taphs vpon the deaths of *Sturio* and *Paulina*, as also that *Bertolini* made a religious and moſt Christian ſpeech at his end, of which I muſt confeſſe I was not ſo happy to recouer the ſight, or copies of either : for if I had, I would not haue failed to haue inserted, and placed them at the end of this their History, to haue ſerved as a grace and ornament thereunto, in inter-